Catherine THE Michell

whole Duty of Man,

Laid down

In a Plain and Familiar Way for the Use of All, but especially the *Meaneſt Reader.*

Divided into XVII. Chapters;

One whereof being read every Lords Day, the Whole may be Read over Thrice in the Year.

Neceſſary for all Families.

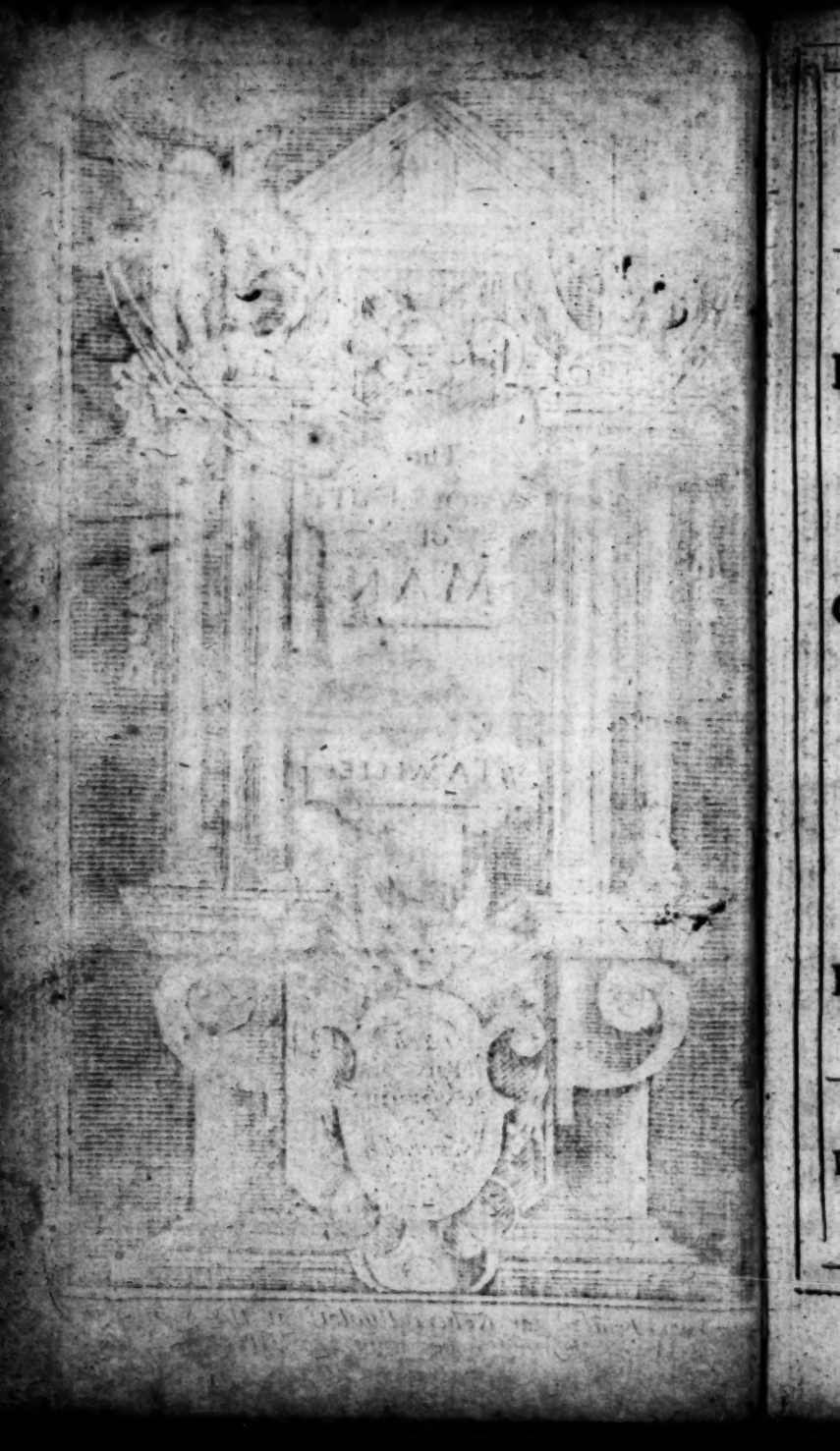
WITH

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS For ſeveral OCCASIONS.

LONDON,
Printed by *R. Norton* for *Robert Pawlett*, at the Sign of the Bible in *Chancery-Lane*, near *Fleetſtreet*, 1680.

DIEV ET MON DROIT

London, Printed for Robert Pawlett at the Sign of the Bible in Chancery Lane near Fleetstreet



Catherine

THE Michell Whole Duty of Man,

Laid down

In a Plain and Familiar Way for the Use of All, but especially the *Meaneſt Reader.*

Divided into XVII. Chapters;

One whereof being read every Lords Day, the Whole may be Read over Thrice in the Year.

Neceſſary for all Families.

WITH

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS For ſeveral OCCASIONS.

LONDON,
Printed by *R. Norton* for *Robert Pawlett*, at the Sign of the Bible in *Chancery-Lane*, near *Fleetſtreet*, 1680.

To the Bookseller.

SIR,

YOU needed not any intercession to recommend this Task to me which brought its Invitations and Reward with it. I very willingly read over all the sheets, both of the *Discourse*, and the *Devotions* annext, and find great cause to bless God for both, not discerning what is wanting in any part of either, to render it with Gods blessing, most sufficient, and proper to the great End designed, the Spiritual supplies and advantages of all those that shall be exercised therein. The subject matter of it, is indeed, what the Title undertakes, *The Whole Duty of Man*, set down in all the Branches, with *Those* advantages of brevity and Partitions, to invite, and support, and engage the Reader, *That* Condescension to the meanest capacities, but withall, *That* weight of spiritual arguments, where-

in the beſt Proficients will be glad to be aſſiſted, that it ſeems to me equally fitted for both ſorts of Readers, which ſhall bring with them a ſincere deſire of their own, either preſent or future advantages. The *Devotion-part* in the Concluſion is no way inferior, being a ſeaſonable aid to every mans Infirmities, and hath extended it ſelf very particularly to all our principal concernments. The *Introduction* hath ſupplied the place of a *Preface*, which you ſeem to deſire from me, and leaves me no more to add, but my *Prayers* to *God*, "That the Author which hath taken "care to convey ſo liberal an Alms to "the *Corban ſo ſecretly*, may not miſs to "be rewarded *openly*, in the viſible po-"wer, and benefit of this work, on the "hearts of the whole Nation, which "was never in more need of ſuch ſup-"plies, as are here afforded. That his All-ſufficient Grace will bleſs the ſeed ſown, and give an abundant encreaſe, is the humbleſt requeſt of

Your aſſured Friend,

March 7. 1657. H. HAMMOND.

A

PREFACE

To the ensuing

TREATISE,

Shewing

The Necessity of Caring for the Soul.

Sect. 1. THE only intent of this ensuing Treatise, is to be a short and Plain Direction to the very meanest Readers, to behave themselves so in this world, that they may be happy for ever in the next. But because 'tis in vain to tell men their Duty, till they be perswaded of the necessity of performing it, I shall, before I proceed to the Particulars required of every Christian, endeavour to win them to the Practice of one general Duty preparatory to all the rest; and that is the Consideration and CARE of their own SOULS, without which they will never think themselves much concern'd in the other.

2. MAN, we know, is made up of two

parts, a BODY *and a* SOUL: *The Body only the huſk or ſhell of the Soul, a lump of fleſh, ſubject to many Diſeaſes and pains while it lives, and at laſt to* Death *it ſelf; and then 'tis ſo far from being valued, that 'tis not to be endured above ground, but laid to rot in the earth. Yet to this viler part of us we perform a great deal of* Care; *all the labour and toil we are at, is to maintain that. But the more precious part, the* Soul, *is little thought of, no care taken how it fares, but as if it were a thing that nothing concern'd us, is left quite neglected, never conſider'd by us.*

3. *This* Careleſneſs *of the* Soul *is the root of all the ſin we commit, and therefore whoſoever intends to ſet upon a Chriſtian courſe, muſt in the firſt place amend that. To the doing whereof, there needs no deep learning, or extraordinary parts; the ſimpleſt man living (that is not a* natural fool) *hath underſtanding enough for it, if he will but act in this by the ſame rules of common* Reaſon, *whereby he proceeds in his worldly buſineſs. I will therefore now briefly ſet down ſome of thoſe* Motives, *which uſe to ſtir up our care of any outward thing, and then apply them to the Soul.*

4. *There be* FOUR *things eſpecially, which uſe to awake our care; the* firſt *is the* Worth *of the thing, the* ſecond *the* Uſefulneſs *of it to us, when we cannot part with it with-*

out

out great damage and miſchief, the Third *the great* Danger *of it, and the* Fourth *the* Likelihood *that our care will not be in vain, but that it will preſerve the thing cared for.*

The worth of the Soul.

5. *For the Firſt, we know our care of any worldly thing is anſwerable to the* Worth *of it; what is of greateſt Price, we are moſt watchful to preſerve, and moſt fearful to loſe; no man locks up* dung *in his cheſt, but his money, or what he counts precious, he doth. Now in this reſpect the Soul deſerves more care, than all the things in the world beſides, for 'tis infinitely more worth; firſt, in that it is made after the* Image *of God, it was God that* breathed into man this breath of life, *Gen.2.7. Now God being of the greateſt Excellency and worth, the more any thing is like him, the more it is to be valued. But 'tis ſure that no Creature upon the earth is at all like* God, *but the Soul of man, and therefore nothing ought to have ſo much of our care.* Secondly, *the* Soul *never* Dies. *We uſe to prize things according to their* Durableneſs: *what is moſt Laſting is moſt Worth. Now the Soul is a thing that will laſt for ever: when Wealth, Beauty, Strength, nay, our very Bodies themſelves fade away, the Soul ſtill continues. Therefore in that reſpect alſo, the Soul is of the greateſt worth; and then what ſtrange madneſs is it for us to neglect*

them as we do? We can ſpend Days, and Weeks, and Months, and Years, nay, our whole Lives in hunting after a little wealth of this world, which is of no durance or continuance, and in the mean time let this great durable treaſure, our Souls, be ſtolen from us by the Devil.

The miſery of loſing the ſoul.

6. A ſecond Motive to our care of any thing, is the USEFULNES of it to us, or the great Miſchief we ſhall have by the loſs of it. Common reaſon teaches us this in all things of this life. If our Hairs fall we do not much regard, becauſe we can be well enough without them: But if we are in danger to loſe our Eyes or Limbs, we think all the care we can take little enough to prevent it, becauſe we know it will be a great miſery. But certainly there is no Miſery to be compared to that miſery that follows the Loſs of the Soul. 'Tis true, we cannot Loſe our Souls, in one ſence, that is, ſo loſe them, that they ſhall ceaſe to Be; but we may loſe them in another, that we ſhould wiſh to loſe them even in that; That is, we may loſe that happy eſtate, to which they were created, and plunge them into the extreameſt miſery. In a word, we may loſe them in Hell, whence there is no fetching them back, and ſo they are loſt for ever. Nay, in this conſideration our very bodies are concerned, thoſe Darlings of

ours,

ours, for which all our care is laid out: for they must certainly after Death be Raised again, and be joyned again to the Soul, *and take part with it in whatever state; if then our care for the* body *take up all our Time and Thoughts, and leave us none to bestow on the poor* Soul, *it is sure the* Soul *will for want of that care be made for ever Miserable. But it is as sure, that that very* Body *must be so too. And therefore if you have any true kindness to your* Body, *shew it by taking Care for your* Souls. *Think with your selves, how you will be able to endure* Everlasting Burnings. *If a small spark of fire, lighting on the least part of the body, be so intolerable, what will it be to have the Whole cast into the hottest flames? And that not for some few hours or days, but for ever? So that when you have spent many* Thousands *of years in that unspeakable Torment, you shall be no nearer coming out of it, than you were the First day you went in: think of this, I say, and think this withal, that this will certainly be the end of Neglecting the* Soul, *and therefore afford it some care, if it be but in pity to the* Body, *that must bear a part in its Miseries.*

The danger the Soul is in.

7. *The* Third Motive *to the care of any thing, is its being in* DANGER; *now a thing may be in danger two wayes: first, by* Enemies *from without: This is the Case of*

the Sheep, *which is ſtill in danger of being devoured by* Wolves; *and we know that makes the Shepherd ſo much the more watchful over it. Thus it is with the Soul, which is in a great deal of danger, in reſpect of its* enemies: *theſe we know are the* World, *the* Fleſh, *and the* Devil; *which are all ſuch noted enemies to it, that the very firſt Act we do in behalf of our* Souls, *is to Vow a continual war againſt them. This we all do in our* Baptiſm; *and whoever makes any truce with any of them, is falſe not only to his Soul, but to his* Vow *alſo; becomes a forſworn creature: A Conſideration well worthy our laying to heart. But that we may the better underſtand, what Danger the Soul is in, let us a little conſider the* quality *of theſe enemies.*

8. *In a war, you know, there are divers things that make an Enemy terrible: The firſt is* Subtilty *and Cunning, by which alone many victories have been won; and in this reſpect the* Devil *is a dangerous adverſary; he long ſince gave ſufficient proof of his* Subtilty, *in beguiling our firſt Parents, who yet were much wiſer than we are; and therefore no wonder if he deceive and cheat us.* Secondly, *the* Watchfulneſs *and* Diligence *of an* Enemy *makes him the more to be Feared; and here the* Devil *exceeds: it is his trade and buſineſs to deſtroy us, and he is no loiterer at it,* he goes up and down

ſeeking

seeking whom he may devour, 1 Pet. 5. 8. *he watches all Opportunities of Advantage againſt us, with ſuch diligence, that he will be ſure never to let any ſlip him.* Thirdly, an Enemy *near us is more to be feared than one at a* Diſtance: *for if he be far off, we may have time to arm, and prepare our ſelves againſt him, but if he be near, he may ſteal on us unawares. And of this ſort is the* fleſh, *it is an Enemy, at our Doors, ſhall I ſay? nay in our Boſoms, it is always near us, to take occaſion of doing us miſchiefs.* Fourthly, *the* Baſer *and* Falſer *an* Enemy *is, the more dangerous. He that hides his malice under the ſhew of Friendſhip, will be able to do a great deal the more hurt. And this again is the fleſh, which like* Joab *to* Abner, 2 Sam. 3. 27. *pretends to ſpeak* peaceably *to us,* but wounds us to death; *'tis forward to purvey for Pleaſures and Delights for us, and ſo ſeems very kind, but it has a* hook *under that* bait, *and if we bite at it we are loſt.* Fifthly, *the Number of* Enemies *makes them more Terrible; and the* World *is a vaſt Army againſt us: There is no ſtate or condition in it, nay, ſcarce a creature which doth not at ſome time or other fight againſt the Soul: The* Honours *of the world ſeek to wound us by* pride, *the* Wealth *by* covetouſneſs, *the* Proſperity *of it tempts us to forget* God, *the* Adverſities *to* murmur *at*

him.

him. Our very Table becomes a ſnare *to us, our meat draws us to* Gluttony, *our drink to* Drunkenneſs, *our* Company, *nay, our neareſt* Friends *often bear a part in this War againſt us; whilſt either by their example, or perſwaſions they intice us to ſin.*

9. *Conſider all this, and then tell me, whether a Soul thus beſet hath leiſure to* ſleep: *even* Dalilah *could tell* Samſon, *it was time to* awake *when the* Philiſtines were upon him. *And* CHRIST *tells us,* If the good man of the houſe had known in what hour the Thief would come, he would have watched, and not have ſuffered his houſe to be broken up, *Mat.*24. 43. *But we live in the midſt of thieves, and therefore muſt look for them every hour, and yet who is there among us, that hath that common providence for this precious part of him, his Soul, which he hath for his houſe, or indeed the meaneſt thing that belongs to him? I fear our Souls may ſay ſo to us, as Chriſt to his Diſciples,* Mat. 26. 40. What? could ye not watch with me one hour? *For I doubt it would poſe many of us to tell when we beſtowed one Hour on them, though we know them to be continually beſet with moſt dangerous Enemies. And then, alas! what is like to be the caſe of theſe poor Souls, when their Adverſaries beſtow ſo much Care and diligence to deſtroy them, and we will afford none to preſerve them?*

them? Surely the same as of a Besieged Town, where no Watch or Guard is kept, which is certain to fall a prey to the Enemy. Consider this ye that forget God, *nay, ye that forget your selves, lest* he pluck you away, and there be none to deliver you, *Psal.* 50. 22.

10. *But I told you there was a* Second *way, whereby a thing may be in Danger, and that is from some Disorder or Distemper within it self. This is often the case of our* Bodies, *they are not only lyable to outward Violence, but they are within themselves Sick and Diseased. And then we can be sensible enough that they are in danger, and need not to be taught to seek out for means to recover them. But this is also the case of the* Soul, *we reckon those parts of the body* diseased, *that do not rightly perform their* office; *we account it a sick palate that tastes not aright, a sick stomach that digests not. And thus it is with the* Soul *when its parts do not rightly perform their* Offices.

11. *The parts of the* Soul *are especially these three: The* UNDERSTANDING, *the* WILL, *and the* AFFECTIONS. *And that these are disordered, there needs little proof; let any man look seriously into his own Heart, and consider how little it is he knows of spiritual things, and then tell me whether his* Understanding *be not dark? How much apter is he to* Will evil *than* good, *and then tell me whether*

ther his Will *be not* Crooked? *And how ſtrong* Deſires *he hath after the pleaſures of ſin, and what* cold *and* faint *ones towards God and goodneſs, and then tell me whether his* Affections *be not* diſordered, *and rebellious even againſt the voice of his own reaſon within him? Now as in bodily diſeaſes, the firſt ſtep to the cure is to know the cauſe of the ſickneſs; ſo likewiſe here it is very neceſſary for us to know how the* Soul *firſt fell into this* Diſeaſed condition, *and that I ſhall now briefly tell you.*

The firſt Covenant.

12. GOD *created the firſt Man* Adam *without* Sin, *and indued his* Soul *with the full* knowledge *of his* Duty; *and with ſuch a ſtrength, that he might, if he would, perform all that was required of him. Having thus created him, he makes a* COVENANT *or agreement with him to this purpoſe, that if he* continued *in* Obedience *to* God *without committing Sin; then firſt, that* Strength *of* Soul, *which he then had, ſhould ſtill be continued to him; and* ſecondly, *that he ſhould never die, but be taken up into* heaven, *there to be Happy for ever. But on the other ſide, if he committed Sin and diſobeyed God, then both He and all his Children after him ſhould loſe that Knowledge and that* perfect Strength, *which enabled him to do all that God requires of him: and* ſecondly, *ſhould be ſubject to*

death,

death, *and not only so, but to Eternal damnation in Hell.*

13. *This was the* Agreement *made with* Adam *and all* Mankind *in him (which we usually call the* FIRST COVENANT) *upon which God gave* Adam *a particular* commandment, *which was no more but this, that he should not eat of* one *only* tree *of that* Garden *wherein he had placed him. But he by the perswasion of the Devil eats of that Tree, disobeys God, and so brings that curse upon himself, and all his posterity. And so by that one* Sin *of his, he lost both the full* knowledge *of his Duty, and the* Power *of* performing *it. And we being born after his* Image, *did so likewise, and so are become both* Ignorant *in discerning what we ought to Do, and* Weak *and unable to the doing of it, having a backwardness to all* good, *and an aptness, and readiness to all evil; like a sick* stomach, *which loaths all wholesome food, and longs after such trash, as may nourish the disease.*

14. *And now you see where we got this sickness of soul, and likewise that it is like to prove a deadly one, and therefore I presume I need say no more, to assure you our Souls are in danger. It is more likely you will from this description think them hopeless. But that you may not from that conceit excuse your Neglect of them, I shall hasten to shew you the contrary,*

by

by proceeding to the fourth *Motive of Care*.

That our Care will not be in vain.

15. *That* Fourth Motive *is the* likelihood, *that our* CARE *will not be in* VAIN, *but that it will be a means to preserve the thing cared for; where this is wanting, it disheartens our care. A Physician leaves his* Patient *when he sees him past* Hope, *as knowing it is then in vain to give him any thing: but on the contrary when he sees hope of recovery, he plies him with Medicines. Now in this very respect we have a great deal of reason to take care of our Souls, for they are not so far gone, but they may be recovered, nay, it is certain they will, if we do our parts towards it.*

16. *For though by that sin of* Adam *all Mankind were under the sentence of eternal condemnation, yet it pleased God so far to pity our misery, as to give us his Son, and in him to make a new Covenant with us, after we had broken the first.*

The second Covenant.

17. *This* SECOND COVENANT *was made with* Adam *and us in him, presently after his Fall, and is briefly contained in those words,* Gen. 3. 15. *Where God* declares, that THE SEED OF THE WOMAN SHALL BREAK THE SERPENTS HEAD; *and this was made up, as the first was, of some mercies to*

be

be afforded by God, and some duties to be performed by us.

18. *God therein promiſes to ſend his only* Son, *who is* God equal *with himſelf, to earth, to become* man like unto us in all things, ſin only excepted, *and he to do for us theſe ſeveral things.*

19. Firſt, *to make* known *to us the* whole Will *of his* Father; *in the performance whereof we ſhall be ſure to be Accepted and rewarded by him. And this was one great part of his buſineſs, which he performed in thoſe many Sermons and Precepts we find ſet down in the* Goſpel. *And herein he is our* PROPHET, *it being the work of a* Prophet *of old not only to* foretel, *but to* Teach. *Our duty in this particular is to hearken diligently to him, to be moſt ready and deſirous to learn that will of God which he came from Heaven to reveal to us.*

The Second *thing He was to do for us, was to* Satisfie God *for our* Sins, *not only that one of* Adam, *but all the Sins of all Mankind that truly repent and amend, and by this means to obtain for us Forgiveneſs of Sins, the Favour of God, and ſo to Redeem us from Hell and eternal damnation, which was the puniſhment due to our ſin. All this he did for us by his death. He offered up himſelf a Sacrifice for the* Sins of all thoſe *who heartily bewail, and forſake them. And in this He is our* PRIEST,

it

it being the Prieſts *Office to* Offer Sacrifice for the ſins of the People. *Our duty in this particular is firſt, truly and heartily to Repent us of, and forſake our ſins, without which they will never be forgiven us, though Chriſt have died.* Secondly, *ſtedfaſtly to* Believe, *that if we do that, we ſhall have the benefits of that* Sacrifice *of his; all our ſins, how many and great ſoever, ſhall be forgiven us, and we ſaved from thoſe eternal puniſhments which were due unto us for them.* Another *part of the* PRIESTS Office *was* Bleſſing *and* Praying *for the People; and this alſo Chriſt performs to us. It was his ſpecial Commiſſion from his Father to Bleſs us, as S.* Peter *tells us,* Acts 3. 26. God ſent his Son Jeſus to bleſs you; *and the following words ſhew wherein that bleſſing conſiſts, in* turning away every one of you from his iniquity: *thoſe means which he has uſed for the turning us from our Sins, are to be reckoned of all other the greateſt Bleſſings; and for the other part, that of* Praying, *that he not only performed on earth, but continues ſtill to do it in Heaven,* He ſits on the right hand of God, and makes requeſt for us, *Rom.* 8. 34. *Our duty herein is, not to reſiſt this unſpeakable bleſſing of his, but to be willing to be thus bleſt in the being* turned from our ſins, *and not to make void and fruitleſs all his* Prayers *and* Interceſsions *for us, which will never prevail for us, whileſt we continue in them.* 21. *The*

21. *The* third *thing, that* Christ *was to do for us, was to* Enable *us, or give us* Strength *to do what God requires of us. This he doth, first, by taking off from the hardneſs of the Law given to* Adam, *which was, never to commit the leaſt ſin, upon pain of damnation, and requiring of us only an* honeſt *and* hearty endeavour *to do what we are able, and where we fail, accepting of* Sincere Repentance. Secondly, *By ſending his* Holy Spirit into our hearts *to govern and Rule us, to give us ſtrength to overcome Temptations to Sin, and to do all that He now under the Goſpel requires of us. And in this he is our* KING, *it being the office of a* King *to govern and rule, and to ſubdue enemies. Our duty in this particular is to give up our ſelves obedient ſubjects of his, to be governed and ruled by him, to obey all his Laws, not to take part with any Rebel, that is, not to cheriſh any one ſin, but diligently to Pray for his* Grace *to enable us to ſubdue all, and then carefully to make uſe of it to that purpoſe.*

22. Laſtly, *He has purchaſed for all that faithfully* obey *him, an* Eternal glorious *inheritance, the* Kingdom *of* Heaven, *whither he is gone before to take poſſeſſion for us. Our duty herein is to be exceeding careful, that we forfeit not our parts in it, which we ſhall certainly do, if we continue impenitent in any ſin.* Secondly, *not to faſten our* Affections *on this world,*

world, but to raiſe them according to the precept of the Apoſtle, Col. 3. 2. Set your affections on things above, and not on things on the earth; *continually longing to come to the poſſeſſion of that bleſſed Inheritance of ours, in compariſon whereof all things here below ſhould ſeem vile and mean to us.*

23. *This is the Sum of that* SECOND COVENANT *we are now under, wherein you ſee what* Chriſt *hath done, how he Executes thoſe* Three Great Offices *of* KING, PRIEST *and* PROPHET: *as alſo what is required of us, without our faithful Performance of which, all that he hath done, ſhall never ſtand us in any ſtead; for he will never be a* Prieſt *to ſave any, who take him not as well for their* Prophet *to* Teach, *and their* King *to* Rule *them; nay, if we neglect our part of this* Covenant, *our condition will be yet worſe, than if it had never been made; for we ſhall then be to Anſwer, not for the breach of Law only, as in the* firſt, *but for the abuſe of mercy, which is of all ſins the moſt provoking. On the other ſide, if we faithfully perform it, that is, ſet our ſelves heartily to the obeying of every Precept of Chriſt, not going on wilfully in any one ſin, but bewailing and forſaking whatever we have formerly been guilty of, it is then moſt certain, that all the forementioned benefits of Chriſt belong to us.*

24. *And*

24. *And now you see how little Reason you have to cast off the* CARE *of your* SOULS, *upon a conceit they are past cure, for that it is plain they are not; Nay certainly they are in that very condition, which of all others makes them fittest for our care. If they had not been thus* REDEEMED *by* CHRIST, *they had been then so hopeless, that care would have been in vain; on the other side, if his Redemption had been such that all men should be saved by it, though they live as they list, we should have thought it needless to take care for them, because they were safe without it. But it hath pleased* God *so to order it, that our care must be the means, by which they must receive the good even of all that* Christ *hath done for them.*

25. *And now if after all that* God *hath done to save these* Souls *of ours, we will not bestow a little* Care *on them our selves, we very well deserve to perish. If a* Physician *should undertake a Patient that were in some desperate disease, and by his skill bring him so far out of it, that he were sure to recover, if he would but take care of himself, and observe those* rules *the Physician set him, would you not think that man weary of his life, that would* refuse to do that? *So certainly that man is* weary *of his* Soul, *wilfully casts it away, that will not consent to those easie conditions, by which he may save it.*

26. *You*

26. *You ſee how great* kindneſs *God hath to theſe Souls of ours, the whole* TRINITY, Father, Son, *and* HOLY Ghoſt *have all done their parts for them. The* FATHER *gave his only Son, the* SON *gave Himſelf, left his Glory, and endured the bitter death of the* Croſs, *meerly to keep our* Souls *from periſhing. The* HOLY GHOST *is become as it were our Attendant, waits upon us with continual offers of his Grace, to enable us to do that which may preſerve them; nay he is ſo deſirous we ſhould accept thoſe Offers of his, that he is ſaid to be* grieved *when we refuſe them,* Epheſ. 4. 30. *Now what greater diſgrace and affront can we put upon God, than to deſpiſe what he thus values? that thoſe Souls of ours, which Chriſt thought worthy every drop of his* bloud, *we ſhould not think worth any part of our* Care? *We uſe in things of the world, to rate them according to the opinion of thoſe who are beſt skilled in them: now certainly* God *who made our* Souls, *beſt knows the* worth *of them, and ſince he prizes them ſo high, let us (if it be but in reverence to him) be aſhamed to neglect them. Eſpecially now that they are in ſo hopeful a condition, that nothing but our own careleſneſs can poſſibly deſtroy them.*

27. *I have now briefly gone over thoſe* Four motives *of care I at firſt propoſed, which are each of them ſuch as never miſſes to ſtir it up*

towards

towards the things of this World; and I have also shewed you how much more Reasonable, nay, Necessary it is they should do the like for the Soul. *And now what can I say more, but conclude in the words of* Isaiah 46.8. Remember this, and shew your selves men. *That is, deal with your* Soul *as your* Reason *teaches you to do with all other things that concern you. And sure this common* Justice *binds you to; for the Soul is that which furnishes you with that* Reason, *which you exercise in all your worldly business; and shall the Soul it self receive no* Benefit *from that* Reason *which it affords you? This is, as if a* Master *of a* Family, *who provides food for his servants should by them be kept from Eating any himself, and so remain the only Starved creature in his house.*

28. *And as Justice ties you to this, so* Mercy *doth likewise; you know the poor Soul will fall into Endless and unspeakable Miseries, if you continue to neglect it, and then it will be too late to consider it. The last Refuge you can hope for, is* Gods mercy, *but that you have despised and abused. And with what face can you in your greatest need beg for* his *mercy to your* Souls, *when you would not afford them your* own? *No not that common* Charity *of considering them, of bestowing a few of those idle* Hours, *you know not (scarce) how to pass away, upon them.*

29. *Lay*

29. *Lay this to your hearts, and as ever you hope for* Gods pity, *when you moſt want it, be ſure in time to* pity *your ſelves, by taking that due care of your* Precious Souls *which belongs to them.*

30. *If what hath been ſaid, have perſwaded you to this ſo* neceſſary a Duty, *my next work will be to tell you how this* Care *muſt be imployed; and that, in a word, is in the doing of all thoſe things which tend to the making the Soul happy, which is the end of our* Care, *and what theſe are I come now to ſhew you.*

For more particular Concernments

See

The Cauſes of the Decay of Chriſtian Piety,

AND

The Gentleman's Calling.

ALSO

The WHOLE DUTY of MAN, **being put into ſignificant Latine for the uſe of Schools, is now Printed.**

All Sold by R. Pawlet, *at the* Bible *in* Chancery-Lane, *near* Fleetſtreet.

SUNDAY I.

Of the Duty of Man by the Light of Nature, by the light of Scripture: the three great branches of Man's Duty, to God, our selves, our Neighbour: our Duty to God; of Faith, the Promises, of Hope, of Love, of Fear, of Trust.

THE Benefits purchased for us by *Christ*, are such as will undoubtedly make the Soul Happy; for Eternal Happiness it self is one of them: but because these Benefits belong not to us till we perform the Condition required of us; whoever desires the happiness of his Soul, must set himself to the performing of that Condition. What that is, I have already mentioned in the General, *That it is the hearty, honest endeavour of obeying the whole will of God.* But then that will of God containing under it many particulars, it is necessary we should also know what those are; that is, what are the several things, that God now requires of us, our performance whereof will bring us to everlasting happiness, and the neglect to endless misery.

2. Of these things there are some which God hath so stamped upon our souls, that we Naturally know them; that is, we should have known them to be our Duty, though we had never been told so by the Scripture. That this is so, we may see by those Heathens, who having never heard of either Old or New Testament, do yet acknowledge themselves bound to some general Duties, as to Worship God, to be Just, to honour their Parents, and the like; and as S. *Paul* saith, *Rom.* 2. 15. *Their Consciences do in those things excuse or accuse them*; that is, tell them, whether they have done what they should in those particulars, or no.

Of the light of Nature.

3. Now though Christ hath brought greater Light into the World, yet he never meant by it to put out any of that Natural light, which God hath set up in our Souls: Therefore let me here, by the way, advise you not to walk contrary even to this lesser light, I mean, not to venture on any of those Acts, which mere Natural Conscience will tell you are sins.

4. It is just matter of sadness to any Christian heart, to see some in these days, who profess much of Religion, and yet live in such sins, as a mere Heathen would abhor; Men that pretending to higher degrees of light and holiness, than their brethren do, yet practise contrary to all the Rules of common honesty, and make it part of their Christian liberty so to do; of whose seducement it concerns all that love their Souls to beware: and for that purpose let this be laid as a Foundation, *That that Religion or Opinion cannot be of God, which allows men in any wickedness.*

5. But

5. But though we muſt not put out this light which God hath thus put into our ſouls, yet this is not the only way whereby God hath revealed his will; and therefore we are not to reſt here, but proceed to the knowledge of thoſe other things which God hath by other means revealed.

The light of Scriptures.

6. The way for us to come to know them is by the Scriptures, wherein are ſet down thoſe ſeveral commands of God which he hath given to be the Rule of our Duty.

7. Of thoſe, ſome were given before Chriſt came into the world, ſuch are thoſe precepts we find ſcattered throughout the Old Teſtament, but eſpecially contained in the Ten Commandments, and that excellent Book of *Deuteronomy*; others were given by Chriſt, who added much, both to the Law implanted in us by Nature, and that of the Old Teſtament; and thoſe you ſhall find in the New Teſtament, in the ſeveral precepts given by him and his Apoſtles, but eſpecially in that Divine Sermon on the Mount, ſet down in the fifth, ſixth and ſeventh Chapters of S. *Matthews* Goſpel.

8. All theſe ſhould be ſeverally ſpoke to, but becauſe that would make the diſcourſe very long, and ſo leſs fit for the meaner ſort of Men, for whoſe uſe alone it is intended, I chuſe to proceed in another manner, by ſumming up all theſe together, and ſo as plainly as I can, to lay down what is now the duty of every Chriſtian.

The three great branches of mans Duty.

9. This I find briefly contain'd in the words of the Apoſtle, *Tit* 2 12. *That we ſhould live ſoberly, righteouſly, and godly*

in this present world; where the word *Soberly*, contains our *duty* to our *selves*; *Righteously*, our duty to our *neighbour*; and *Godly*, our *duty* to *God*. These therefore shall be the Heads of my Discourse, our DUTY to GOD, our SELVES, and our NEIGHBOUR. I begin with that to *God*, that being the best ground-work whereon to build both the other.

Duty to God.

10. There are many parts of our DUTY to GOD; the two chief are these: First, to acknowledge him to be God; secondly, to have no other. Under these are contained all those particulars, which make up our whole duty to God, which shall be shewed in their order.

Acknowledging him to be God.

11. To acknowledge him to be God, is to believe him to be an infinite glorious Spirit, that was from everlasting, without beginning, and shall be to everlasting, without end. That he is our Creator, Redeemer, Sanctifier, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, one God, blessed for ever. That he is subject to no alteration, but is unchangeable; that he is no bodily substance, such as our eyes may behold, but spiritual and invisible, whom *no man hath seen, nor can see*, as the Apostle tells us, 1 *Tim.* 3. 16. That he is infinitely Great and Excellent, beyond all that our wit or conceit can imagine; that he hath received his being from none, and gives being to all things.

12. All this we are to believe of him in regard of his Essence and being: but beside this, he is set forth to us in the *Scripture* by several *Excellencies*,

cies, as that he is of Infinite Goodneſs and Mercy, Truth, Juſtice, Wiſdom, Power, All-ſufficiency, Majeſty; that he diſpoſes and governs all things by his Providence; that he knows all things and is preſent in all places; theſe are by Divines called the Attributes of God, and all theſe we muſt undoubtingly acknowledge, that is, we muſt firmly believe all theſe Divine Excellencies to be in God, and that in the greateſt degree, and ſo that they can never ceaſe to be in him, he can never be other than *infinitely Good, Merciful, True*, &c.

13. But the acknowledging him for our God ſignifies yet more than this; it means that we ſhould perform to him all thoſe ſeveral parts of Duty which belong from a Creature to his God: what thoſe are I am now to tell you.

14. The firſt is FAITH, or Belief, not only that foremention'd of his Eſſence and Attributes, but of his Word, the believing moſt firmly, that all that he ſaith is perfectly true. This neceſſarily ariſes from that Attribute, his Truth, it being natural for us to believe whatſoever is ſaid of one of whoſe truth we are confident. Now the holy Scriptures being the Word of God, we are therefore to conclude, that all that is contained in them is moſt true. *Faith.*

15. The things contained in them are of theſe four ſorts: Firſt, Affirmations, ſuch are all the ſtories of the Bible when it is ſaid, ſuch and ſuch things came ſo and ſo to paſs; Chriſt was born of a Virgin, was laid in a Manger, *&c.* And ſuch alſo are many points of Doctrine, as that there are three Perſons in the *Godhead*, that *Chriſt* *Of his Affirmations.*

is the *Son of God*, and the like. All things of this sort thus delivered in Scripture we are to believe most true. And not only so, but because they are all written for our instruction; we are to consider them for that purpose, that is, by them to lay that Foundation of Christian knowledge, on which we may build a Christian life.

Commands. 16. The second sort of things contained in the Scripture, are the *Commands*, that is, the several things enjoyned us by God to perform; these we are to believe to come from him, and to be most just and fit for him to command: but then this belief must bring forth obedience, that what we believe thus fit to be done, be indeed done by us; otherwise our belief that they come from him serves but to make us more inexcusable.

Threatnings. 17. Thirdly, the Scripture contains threatnings; many Texts there are which threaten to them that go on in their sins, the wrath of God, and under that are contained all the punishments and miseries of this life, both spiritual and temporal, and everlasting destruction in the life to come. Now we are most stedfastly to believe, that these are God's threats, and that they will certainly be performed to every impenitent sinner. But then the use we are to make of this belief, is to keep from those sins to which this destruction is threatned; otherwise our belief adds to our guilt, that will wilfully go on in spight of those threatnings.

Promises. 18. Fourthly, the Scripture contains Promises, and those both to our Bodies and our Souls; for our Bodies there

are

are many promises that God will provide for them what he sees necessary, I will name only one, *Mat.* 6. 33. *Seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness, and all these things*, that is, all outward necessaries *shall be added unto you*: but here it is to be observed, that we must *first seek the Kingdom of God and his righteousness*, that is, make it our first and greatest care to serve and obey him, before this promise even of temporal good things belong to us. To the soul there are many and high promises, as first, that of present ease and refreshment, which we find, *Matt.* 11. 29. *Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me, and ye shall find rest to your souls*: but here it is apparent, that before this rest belongs to us, we must have *taken on us Christs yoke*, become his servants and Disciples. Finally, there are promises to the soul even of all the benefits of Christ; but yet those only to such as perform the condition required; that is, Pardon of sins to those that repent of them, Increase of Grace to those that diligently make use of what they have already, and humbly pray for more; and Eternal Salvation to those that continue to their lives end in hearty obedience to his Commands.

19. This Belief of the Promises must therefore stir us up to perform the Condition, and till it do so, we can in no reason expect any good by them: and for us to look for the benefit of them on other terms, is the same mad presumption that it would be in a servant to challenge his Master to give him a reward for having done nothing of his work, to which alone the reward was promised; you can easily resolve what answer were to be

given to such a servant, and the same we are to expect from God in this case. Nay further, it is sure, God hath given these promises to no other end, but to invite us to holiness of life; yea, he gave his Son, in whom all his promises are as it were summ'd up, for this end. We usually look so much at Christ's coming to satisfie for us, that we forget this other part of his errand. But there is nothing surer, than that the main purpose of his coming into the World was to plant good life among men.

20. This is so often repeated in Scripture, that no man that considers and believes what he reads can doubt of it. Christ himself tells us, *Mat.* 9. 13. *He came to call sinners to repentance.* And S. *Peter*, *Acts* 3. 26. tells us, *That God sent his Son Jesus to bless us, in turning every one of us from our iniquities*; for it seems the *turning us from our iniquities* was the greatest special Blessing which God intended us in Christ.

21. Nay, we are taught by S. *Paul*, that this was the end of his very death also, *Tit.* 2. 14. *Who gave himself for our sins, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purifie to himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.* And again, *Gal.* 1. 4. *Who gave himself for us, that he might deliver us from this present evil world*, that is, from the sins and ill customs of the world. Divers other Texts there are to this purpose; but these I suppose sufficient to assure any man of this one great truth, that all that Christ hath done for us was directed to this end, the bringing us to live Christianly; or in the words of S. *Paul*, *to teach us, that denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously and godly in this present world.*

22. Now

22. Now we know Christ is the foundation of all the promises; *In him all the promises of God are yea, and Amen*, 2 *Cor.* 1. 20. And therefore if God gave Christ to this end, certainly the Promises are to the same also. And then how great an abuse of them is it to make them serve for purposes quite contrary to what they were intended? *viz.* to the incouraging us in sins, which they will certainly do, if we perswade our selves they belong to us, how wickedly soever we live. The Apostle teaches us another use of them, 2 *Cor.* 7. 1. *Having therefore these promises, let us cleanse our selves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.* When we do thus, we may justly apply the promises to our selves, and with comfort expect our parts in them. But till then, though these promises be of certain truth, yet we can reap no benefit from them, because we are not the persons to whom they are made, that is, we perform not the condition required to give us right to them.

23. This is the Faith or Belief required of us towards the things God hath revealed to us in the Scripture, to wit, such as may answer the end for which they were so revealed, that is, the bringing us to good lives; the bare believing the truth of them, without this, is no more than the Devils do, as S. *James* tells us, Chap. 2. 19. Only they are not so unreasonable as some of us are, for they will tremble, as knowing well this Faith will never do them any good. But many of us go on confidently, and doubt not the sufficiency of our Faith, though we have not the least fruit of obedience to approve it by, let such hear

S. *James*'s judgment in the point, Chap. 2. 26. *As the body without the spirit is dead, so Faith if it have not works is dead also.*

Hope.

24. A second duty to God is HOPE, that is, a comfortable expectation of these good things he hath promised. But this, as I told you before of Faith, must be such as agrees to the nature of the promises, which being such as requires a condition on our part, we can hope no further than we make that good; or if we do, we are so far from performing by it this duty of Hope, that we commit the great sin of Presumption, which is nothing else but hoping where God hath given us no ground to hope: this every Man doth, that hopes for pardon of sins and eternal life, without that repentance and obedience to which alone they are promised; the true hope is that which purifies us, S. *John* saith, 1 Ep. 3. 3. *Every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure*; that is, it makes him leave his sins, and earnestly endeavour to be holy as Christ is, and that which doth not so, how confident soever it be, may well be concluded to be but that hope of the Hypocrite, which *Job* assures us shall perish.

Presumption.

Despair.

25. But there is another way of transgressing this Duty, besides that of Presumption, and that is by desperation, by which I mean not that which is ordinarily so called, *viz.* the despairing of mercy, so long as we continue in our sins, for that is but just for us to do; but I mean such a desperation as makes us give over endeavour, that is, when a Man that

that sees he is not at the present such a one as the promises belong to, concludes, he can never become such, and therefore neglects all duty, and goes on in his sins. This is indeed the sinful desperation, and that which if it be continued in, must end in destruction.

26. Now the work of Hope is to prevent this, by setting before us the generality of the promises, that they belong to all that will but perform the condition. And therefore though a Man have not hitherto performed it, and so hath yet no right to them, yet hope will tell him, that that right may yet be gained, if he will now set heartily about it. It is therefore strange folly for any Man, be he never so sinful, to give up himself for lost, when if he will but change his course, he shall be as certain to partake of the promises of mercy, as if he had never gone on in those former sins.

27. This Christ shews us in the Parable of the Prodigal, *Luke* 15. where we see that Son, which had run away from his Father, and had consumed the portion given him, in riotous living, was yet upon his return and repentance used with as much kindness by the Father, as he that had never offended, nay with higher and more passionate expressions of love. The intent of which Parable was only to shew us how graciously our heavenly Father will receive us, how great soever our former sins have been, if we shall return to him with true sorrow for what is past, and sincere obedience for the time to come; nay so acceptable a thing is it to God, to have any sinner return from the error of his ways, that there is a

kind

kind of Triumph in Heaven for it, *There is joy in the presence of the Angels of God, over one sinner that repenteth*, Luke 15. 10. And now who would not rather chuse by a timely repentance, to bring joy to Heaven, to God and his holy Angels, than by a sullen desperation to please Satan and his accursed spirits; especially when by the former we shall gain endless happiness to our selves, and by the latter as endless torments?

Love its Motives.

21. A third duty to God is LOVE; there are two common Motives of love among men. The one the goodness and excellency of the person, the other his particular kindness, and love to us; and both these are in the highest degree in God.

Gods excellency.

29. First, he is of infinite goodness, and excellency in himself; this you were before taught to believe of him, and no Man can doubt it that considers but this one thing, that there is nothing good in the World, but what hath received all its goodness from God: his goodness is as the Sea, or Ocean, and the goodness of all Creatures but as some small streams flowing from the Sea. Now you would certainly think him a mad man, that should say the Sea were not greater than some little Brook: and certainly it is no less folly to suppose that the goodness of God doth not as much (nay infinitely more) exceed that of all creatures. Besides, the goodness of the creature is imperfect and mixt with much evil; but his is pure and entire without any such mixture. He is perfectly Holy, and cannot be tainted with the least impurity, neither can be the author of any to

us;

us; for though he be the cauſe of all the goodneſs in us, he is the cauſe of none of our ſins. This S. *James* expreſly tells us, Chap. 1. 13. *Let no man ſay when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man.*

30. But ſecondly, God is not only thus good in himſelf, but he is alſo wonderful good, that is, kind and merciful to us; we are made up of two parts, a Soul and a Body, and to each of theſe God hath expreſſed infinite mercy and tenderneſs. Do but conſider what was before told you of the SECOND COVENANT, and the mercies therein offered, even Chriſt himſelf and all his benefits, and alſo that he offers them ſo ſincerely and heartily, that no man can miſs of enjoying them but by his own default. For he doth moſt really and affectionately deſire we ſhould embrace them and live; as appears by that ſolemn Oath of his, *Ezek.* 33. 11. *As I live ſaith the Lord, I have no pleaſure in the death of the wicked, but that the wicked turn from his way and live*; whereto he adds this paſſionate expreſſion, *Turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways, for why will ye die?* To the ſame purpoſe you may read *Ezek.* 18. Conſider this, I ſay, and then ſurely you cannot but ſay, he hath great kindneſs to our Souls. Nay, let every Man but remember with himſelf the many calls he hath had to repentance and amendment: ſometimes outward by the Word, ſometimes inward by the ſecret whiſpers of God's Spirit in his heart, which were only to woo and intreat him to avoid Eternal miſery, and to accept

His kindneſs to us.

of

of Eternal happineſs; let him, I ſay, remember theſe, together with thoſe many other means God hath uſed toward him for the ſame end, and he will have reaſon to confeſs God's kindneſs, not only to Mens ſouls in general, but to his own in particular.

31. Neither hath he been wanting to our Bodies; all the good things they enjoy, as health, ſtrength, food, raiment, and whatever elſe concerns them, are merely his gifts: ſo that indeed it is impoſſible we ſhould be ignorant of his mercies to them, all thoſe outward comforts and refreſhments we daily enjoy, being continual effects and witneſſes of it; and though ſome enjoy more of theſe than others, yet there is no perſon but enjoys ſo much in one kind or other, as abundantly ſhews God's mercy and kindneſs to him in reſpect of his Body.

32. And now ſurely you will think it but reaſonable we ſhould Love him, who is in all reſpects thus Lovely: Indeed this is a duty ſo generally acknowledged, that if you ſhould ask any Man the queſtion, whether he loved God or no, he would think you did him great wrong to doubt of it; yet for all this, it is too plain, that there are very few, that do indeed love him; and this will ſoon be proved to you by examining a little, what are the common effects of love, which we bear to Men like our ſelves, and then trying, whether we can ſhew any ſuch fruits of our love to God.

Fruit of Love, deſire of pleaſing.

33. Of that ſort there are divers, but for ſhortneſs I will name but two. The firſt is a deſire

ſire of pleaſing, the ſecond a deſire of enjoyment. Theſe are conſtantly the fruits of Love. For the firſt, 'tis known by all, that he that loves any perſon is very deſirous to approve himſelf to him, to do whatſoever he thinks will be pleaſing to him; and according to the degree of love, ſo is this deſire more or leſs; where we love earneſtly, we are very earneſt, and careful to pleaſe. Now if we have indeed that love to God, we pretend to, it will bring forth this fruit, we ſhall be careful to pleaſe him in all things. Therefore as you judge of the *tree by its fruits*, ſo may you judge of your love to God, by this fruit of it; nay indeed this is the way of trial, which Chriſt himſelf hath given us, *John* 14. 15. *If ye love me, keep my Commandments*, and S. *John* tells us, 1 Ep. 5. 3. *That this is the love of God, that we walk after his Commandments*, and where this one proof is wanting, it will be impoſſible to teſtifie our love to God.

34. But it muſt yet be farther conſidered, that this love of God muſt not be in a low or weak degree, for beſides that the motives to it, His Excellency and his kindneſs are in the higheſt, the ſame commandment which bids us love God, bids us *love him with all our hearts, and with all our ſtrength*, that is, as much as is poſſible for us, and above any thing elſe. And therefore to the fulfilling of this Commandment, it is neceſſary we love him in that degree; and if we do ſo, then certainly we ſhall have not only ſome ſlight and faint endeavours of pleaſing, but ſuch as are moſt diligent and earneſt, ſuch as will put us upon the moſt painful and coſtly duties, make us wil-

willing to forſake our own eaſe, goods, friends, yea life it ſelf, when we cannot keep them without diſobeying God.

35. Now examine thy ſelf by this; haſt thou this fruit of love to ſhew? Doſt thou make it thy conſtant and greateſt care to keep God's Commandments? To obey him in all things? Earneſtly labouring to pleaſe him to the utmoſt of thy power, even to the forſaking of what is deareſt to thee in this world? If thou doſt, thou mayeſt then truly ſay thou loveſt God. But on the contrary, if thou wilfully continueſt in the breach of many, nay, but of any one command of his, never deceive thy ſelf, for the love of God abides not in thee. This will be made plain to you, if you conſider what the Scripture ſaith of ſuch, as that they *are enemies to God by their wicked works*, Col. 1. 21. That the carnal mind (and ſuch is every one that continues *wilfully in ſin*) is *enmity with God*, Rom. 8. 7. That he that *ſins wilfully, tramples under foot the Son of God, and doth deſpight unto the Spirit of Grace*, Heb. 10. 29. and many the like. And therefore unleſs you can think enmity, and trampling, and deſpight to be fruits of love, you muſt not believe you love God, whilſt you go on in a wilful diſobedience to him.

Deſire of Enjoying.

36. A ſecond fruit of Love, I told you, was deſire of Enjoying. This is conſtantly to be ſeen in our love to one another. If you have a friend whom you entirely love, you deſire his converſation, wiſh to be always in his company: and thus will it be alſo in our love to God, if that be as great and hearty as this.

37. There

37. There is a twofold Enjoying of God, the one Imperfect in this life, the other more Perfect and complete in the life to come: that in this life is that converſation, as I may call it, which we have with God in his Ordinances, and Praying and Meditating, in hearing his Word, in receiving the Sacrament, which are all intended for this purpoſe, to bring us into an intimacy and familiarity with God by ſpeaking to him, and hearing him ſpeak to us.

38. Now if we do indeed love God, we ſhall certainly hugely value and deſire theſe ways of converſing with him; it being all that we can have in this life, it will make us with *David* eſteem *one day in God's courts better than a thouſand, Pſal.* 84. 10. we ſhall be glad to have theſe opportunities of approaching to him as often as it is poſſible, and be careful to uſe them diligently, to that end of uniting us ſtill more to him, yea we ſhall come to theſe Spiritual exercciſes with the ſame chearfulneſs we would go to our deareſt friend. And if indeed we do thus, it is a good proof of our Love.

39. But I fear there are not many have this to ſhew for it, as appears by the common backwardneſs and unwillingneſs of men to come to theſe; and their negligence and heartleſneſs when they are at them; and can we think that God will ever own us for lovers of him, whileſt we have ſuch diſlike to his company, that we will never come into it but when we are dragg'd by fear, or ſhame of men, or ſome ſuch worldly Motive? It is ſure you would not think that man loved you, whom you perceive to ſhun your com-

company and be loth to come in your sight. And therefore be not so unreasonable as to say, You love God, when yet you desire to keep as far from him as you can.

40. But besides this there is another Enjoyment of God, which is more perfect and complete, and that is our perpetual enjoying of him in Heaven, where we shall be for ever united to him, and enjoy him not now and then only for short spaces of time, as we do here, but continually without interruption or breaking off. And certainly if we have that degree of love to God we ought, this cannot but be most earnestly desired by us so much, that we shall think no labour too great to compass it. The seven years that *Jacob* served for *Rachel*, Gen. 29. 20. *seemed to him but a few days for the love that he had to her.* And surely if we have love to God, we shall not think the service of our whole lives too dear a price for this full Enjoyment of him, not esteem all the Enjoyments of the World worth the looking on in comparison thereof.

41. If we can truly tell our selves we do thus long for this enjoyment of God, we may believe we love him. But I fear again there are but few that can thus approve their love. For if we look into mens lives, we shall see they are not generally so fond of this Enjoyment, as to be at any pains to purchase it. And not only so, but it is to be doubted, there are many who if it were put to their choice, whether they would live here always to enjoy the profit and pleasure of the World, or go to Heaven to enjoy God, would like the children of *Gad* and *Reuben*, set up their

rest

reſt on this ſide *Jordan*, *Numb.* 32. and never deſire that heavenly *Canaan*; ſo cloſe do their affections cleave to things below, which ſhews clearly they have not made God their treaſure, for then according to our Saviour's Rule, *Matth.* 6. 22. their heart would be with him. Nay, further yet; it is too plain that many of us ſet ſo little value on this enjoying of God, that we prefer the vileſt and baſeſt ſins before him, and chuſe to enjoy them, though by it we utterly loſe our parts in him, which is the caſe of every Man that continues wilfully in thoſe ſins.

42. And now I fear, according to theſe Rules of Trial, many that profeſs to love God, will be found not to do ſo. I conclude all with the words of S. *John*, 1 *Ep.* 3. 18. which though ſpoken of the love of our brethren, is very fitly appliable to this love of God, *Let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in deed and in truth.*

43. A Fourth duty to God is FEAR; this ariſes from the conſideration both of his juſtice & his power; his juſtice is ſuch that he will not clear the wicked, and his Power ſuch, that he is able to inflict the ſoreſt puniſhments upon them; and that this is a reaſonable cauſe of fear, Chriſt himſelf tells us, *Matth.* 10. 28. *Fear him which is able to deſtroy both ſoul and body in hell.* Many other places of Scripture there are, which commend to us this duty, as *Pſal.* 2. 11. *Serve the Lord with fear*; Pſ. 34. 9. *Fear the Lord ye that be his Saints*, Pro. 9. 10. *The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wiſdom*, and divers the like; and indeed all the threatnings of wrath againſt ſinners, which we meet with in the Scripture, are only to this end, to work this fear in our hearts. *Fear.*

44. Now

44. Now this fear is nothing else, but such an awful regard of God, as may keep us from offending him. This the Wise man tells us, *Prov.* 16.17. *The fear of the Lord is to depart from evil:* so that none can be said truly to fear God, that is not thereby with-held from sin; and this is but answerable to that common fear we have towards men; who ever we know may hurt us, we will beware of provoking; and therefore if we be not as wary of displeasing God, it is plain we fear men more than we do him.

The folly of fearing Men more than God.

45. How great a madness this is, thus to fear men above God, will soon appear, if we compare what man can do to us with that which God can. And first, it is sure, it is not in the power of man (I might say Devils too) to do us any hurt, unless God permit and suffer them to do it: so that if we do but keep him our friend, we may say with the Psalmist, *The Lord is on my side, I fear not what man can do unto me.* For let their malice be never so great, he can restrain and keep them from hurting us; nay he can change their minds towards us, according to that of the Wise man, *Prov.* 16.7. *When a mans ways please the Lord, he maketh even his enemies to be at peace with him.* A notable example of this we have in *Jacob*, *Gen.* 32. who when his Brother *Esau* was coming against him as an enemy, God wonderfully turned his heart, so that he met him with all the expressions of brotherly kindness, as you may read in the next Chapter.

46. But

46. But ſecondly, Suppoſe men were left at liberty to do thee what miſchief they could; alas! their power goes but a little way; they may perhaps rob thee of thy goods, it may be they may take away thy liberty or thy credit, or perchance thy life too, but that thou knoweſt is the utmoſt they can do. But now God can do all this when he pleaſes, and that which is infinitely more, his vengeance reaches even beyond death it ſelf, to the Eternal miſery both of Body and Soul in Hell; in compariſon of which, death is ſo inconſiderable, that we are not to look upon it with any dread. *Fear not them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do,* ſaith Chriſt, *Luke* 12. 4. and then immediately adds, *But I will forewarn you whom you ſhall fear, fear him which after he hath killed, hath power to caſt into hell, yea, I ſay unto you fear him.* In which words the compariſon is ſet between the greateſt ill we can ſuffer from Man, the loſs of life, and thoſe ſadder evils God can inflict on us; and the latter are found to be the only dreadful things, and therefore God only to be feared.

47. But there is yet one thing farther conſiderable in this matter, which is this, It is poſſible we may tranſgreſs againſt men and they not know it: I may perhaps ſteal my neighbours goods, or defile his wife, and keep it ſo cloſe that he ſhall not ſuſpect me, and ſo never bring me to puniſhment for it: but this we cannot do with God, he knows all things, even the moſt ſecret thoughts of our hearts; and therefore though we commit a ſin never ſo cloſely, he is ſure to find us, and will as ſurely, if we do not timely repent, puniſh us eternally for it.

48. And

48. And now ſurely it cannot but be confeſt, that it is much ſafer diſpleaſing men, than God; yet, alas, our practice is as if we believed the direct contrary, there being nothing more ordinary with us, than for the avoiding of ſome preſent danger we fear from Men, to ruſh our ſelves upon the indignation of God. And thus it is with us, when either to ſave our eſtates, or credits, or our very lives, we commit any ſin, for that is plainly the chuſing to provoke God, rather than man.

49. But God knows this caſe of fear of men is not the only one wherein we venture to diſpleaſe him; for we commit many ſins, to which we have none of this temptation, nor indeed any other; as for inſtance, that of common ſwearing, to which there is nothing either of pleaſure, or profit to invite us. Nay, many times, we, who ſo fear the miſchiefs that other men may do to us, that we are ready to buy them off with the greateſt ſins, do our ſelves bring all thoſe very miſchiefs upon us, by ſins of our own chuſing. Thus the careleſs Prodigal robs himſelf of his eſtate, the deceitful and diſhoneſt man, or any that lives in open notorious ſin, deprives himſelf of his credit, and the Drunkard and Glutton brings Diſeaſes on himſelf, to the ſhortning his life. And can we think we do at all fear God, when that fear hath ſo little power over us, that though it be backt with the many preſent miſchiefs that attend upon ſin, it is not able to keep us from them? Surely ſuch Men are ſo far from fearing God, that they rather ſeem to defie him, reſolve to provoke him, whatſoever it coſt them, either

either in this world or the next. Yet ſo unreaſonably partial are we to our ſelves, that even ſuch as theſe will pretend to this fear: you may examine multitudes of the moſt groſs ſcandalous ſinners, before you ſhall meet with one that will acknowledge he fears not God. It is ſtrange it ſhould be poſſible for Men thus to cheat themſelves; but however it is certain we cannot deceive God, he will not be mockt, and therefore if we will not now ſo fear as to avoid ſin, we ſhall one day fear when it will be too late to avoid puniſhment.

Truſt.

50. A fifth duty to God is that of TRUSTING in him, that is, depending and reſting on him: and that is firſt in all dangers, ſecondly in all wants. We are to reſt on him in all our dangers both Spiritual and Temporal. Of the firſt ſort, are all thoſe Temptations, by which we are in danger to be drawn to ſin. And in this reſpect he hath promiſed that if we *reſiſt the Devil he ſhall flee from us*, Jam. 4. 7. Therefore our duty is firſt to pray earneſtly for God's grace to enable us to overcome the temptation, and ſecondly, to ſet our ſelves manfully to combate with it, not yielding or giving conſent to it in the leaſt degree; and whileſt we do thus, we are confidently to reſt upon God, that his grace will be ſufficient for us, that he will either remove the temptation, or ſtrengthen us to withſtand it.

In all ſpiritual dangers.

51. Secondly, in all outward and Temporal dangers we are to reſt upon him, as knowing that he is able to

In all Temporal.

deliver

deliver us, and that he will do so if he see it best for us, and if we be such to whom he hath promised his protection, that is, such as truly fear him. To this purpose we have many promises in Scripture, *Psal.* 34. 7. *The Angel of the Lord tarrieth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them*: and *Psal.* 34. 20. *The Lord delivereth the souls of his Saints, and all that put their trust in him shall not be destitute*; and divers the like.

Also we have many examples, as that of the three children in the Furnace, *Daniel* 3. That of *Daniel* in the Lions Den, *Dan.* 6. and many others; all which serve to teach us this one lesson, that if we go on conscionably in performing our duty, we need not be dismayed for any thing that can befal us, for the God whom we serve is able to deliver us.

Not seek to deliver our selves by any sin.

52. Therefore in all dangers we are first humbly to pray for his aid, and then to rest our selves chearfully on him; and assuring our selves that he will give such an issue as shall be most for our good. But above all things, we must be sure to fix our dependence wholly on him, and not to rely on the creatures for help; much less must we seek to deliver our selves by any unlawful means, that is, by the committing of any sin; for that is like *Saul*, 1 *Sam.* 18. 7. *to go to the witch*, that is, to the *Devil* for help; such courses do commonly deceive our hopes at the present, and instead of delivering us out of our straits, plunge us in greater, and those much more uncomfortable ones, because then we want that which is the only

only support, God's favour and aid, which we certainly forfeit, when we thus seek to rescue our selves by any sinful means. But supposing we could by such a way certainly free our selves from the present danger; yet alas, we are far from having gained safety by it; we have only removed the danger from that which was less considerable, and brought it upon the most precious part of us, our Souls; like an unskilful Physician, that to remove a pain from the finger strikes it to the heart; we are therefore grosly mistaken, when we think we have played the good Husband in saving our Liberties or Estates, or Lives themselves by a sin; we have not saved them, but madly overbought them, laid out our very Souls on them: and Christ tells us how little we shall gain by such bargains, *Matth. 16. 26. What is a man profited if he shall gain the whole world and lose his own soul?* Let us therefore resolve never to value any thing we can possess in this world at so high a rate, as to keep it at the price of the least sin; but whenever things are driven to such an issue, that we must either part with some, perhaps all our worldly possessions, nay, life it self, or else commit sin, let us then remember, that this is the season for us to perform that great and excellent duty of *taking up the Cross*, which we can never so properly do as in this case: for our bearing of that which we have no possible way of avoiding, can at most be said to be but the carrying of the Cross, but then only can we be said to take it up, when having a means of escaping it by a sin, we rather chuse to endure the Cross than commit the Sin; for then it is not laid

on us by any unavoidable neceſſity, but we willingly chuſe it; and this is highly acceptable with God, yea, withal ſo ſtrictly required by him, that if we fail of performing of it, when we are put to the trial, we are not to be accounted followers of Chriſt, for ſo himſelf hath expreſly told us, *Matth.* 16. 24. *If any man come after me, let him deny himſelf, and take up his Croſs and follow me*; and ſo again, *Mark* 8. 34. It were therefore a good point of Spiritual wiſdom for us, ſometimes by ſome lower degrees of ſelf-denial, to fit our ſelves for this greater, when we ſhall be called to it; we know he that expects to run a Race will before-hand be often breathing himſelf, that he may not be foil'd when he comes to run for the prize; in like manner 'twill be fit for us, ſometimes to abridge our ſelves ſomewhat of our lawful pleaſure, or eaſe, or profit, ſo that we may get ſuch a maſtery over our ſelves, as to be able to renounce all when our obedience to God requires it.

In all wants ſpiritual.

53. And as we are thus to truſt on God for deliverance from danger, ſo are we likewiſe for ſupply of our wants; and thoſe again are either Spiritual or Temporal: our Spiritual want is that of his Grace to enable us to ſerve him, without which we can do nothing; and for this we are to depend on him, provided, we neglect not the means, which are Prayer and a careful uſing of what he hath already beſtowed on us: For then we have his promiſe for it, *He will give the holy Spirit to them that ask it*, *Luke* 11. 15. and *unto him that hath ſhall be given*, *Matth.* 25. 29.

that

that is, *To him that hath made a good use of that grace he hath already, God will give more.* We are not therefore to affright our selves with the difficulty of those things God requires of us, but remember he commands nothing which he will not enable us to perform, if we be not wanting to our selves. And therefore let us sincerely do our parts, and confidently assure our selves God will not fail of his.

54. But we have likewise Temporal and Bodily wants, and for the supply of them we are likewise to rely on him. And for this also we want no Promises, supposing us to be of the number of them to whom they are made, that is, God's faithful Servants: *They that fear the Lord lack nothing*, Psal. 34. 9. and ver. 10. *They that seek the Lord shall want no manner of thing that is good:* Again, Psal. 33. 18, 19. *Behold the eye of the Lord is upon them that fear him, upon them that hope in his mercy, to deliver their souls from death, and to feed them in time of famine.* Examples also we have of this, as we may see in the case of *Elijah*, and the *poor Widow*, 1 *Kings* 17. and many others. *Temporal wants.*

55. We are therefore to look up to him for the provision of all things necessary for us, according to that of the *Psalmist*, *The eyes of all wait upon thee, O Lord, and thou givest them their meat in due season.* And our Saviour hath taught us to pray for our *daily bread*; thereby teaching us that we are to live in continual dependence upon God for it. Yet I mean not by this, that we should so expect it from God, as to give up our selves to idleness, and expect to be fed by Miracles. No,

our honeſt induſtry and labour is the means by which God ordinarily gives us the neceſſaries of this life; and therefore we muſt by no means neglect that, *He that will not labour let him not eat*, ſays the Apoſtle, 2 *Theſſ.* 3. 10. And we may believe God will pronounce the ſame ſentence, and ſuffer the ſlothful perſon to want even neceſſary food. But when we have faithfully uſed our own endeavour, then we muſt alſo look up to God for his bleſſing on it, without which it can never proſper to us. And having done thus, we may comfortably reſt our ſelves on his Providence for ſuch a meaſure of theſe outward things as he ſees fitteſt for us.

56. But if our condition be ſuch that we are not able to labour, and have no other means of bringing in the neceſſaries of life to our ſelves, yet even then we are chearfully to reſt upon God, believing that he who feeds the Ravens, will by ſome means or other, though we know not what, provide for us, ſo long as he pleaſes we ſhall continue in this world, and never in any caſe torment our ſelves with carking and diſtruſtful thoughts, but as the Apoſtle, 1 *Pet.* 5. 7. *Caſt all our care on him who careth for us.*

57. This is earneſtly preſt by our Saviour, *Matt.* 6. where he abundantly ſhews the folly of this ſin of diſtruſt. The place is a moſt excellent one, and therefore I ſhall ſet it down at large, Verſe 25. *Therefore, I ſay unto you; Take no thought for your life what you ſhall eat, or what you ſhall drink; neither for your body, what you ſhall put on; Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment? Behold the fowls of the Air, for they ſow not, neither*

do

do they reap, nor gather into barns, yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit to his stature? And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the Lilies of the field how they grow, they toil not, neither do they spin, and yet I say unto you, that even Solomon *in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. Wherefore if God so cloath the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the Oven, shall he not much more cloath you, O ye of little Faith? Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? Or what shall we drink? Or wherewithal shall we be cloathed? (for after all these things do the Gentiles seek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. But seek ye first the Kingdom of God and his righteousness, and then all these things shall be added unto you. Take therefore no thought for to morrow, for the morrow shall take thought for the things of it self; sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.* I might add many other Texts to this purpose, but this is so full and convincing, that I suppose it needless.

58. All therefore that I shall say more concerning this duty is to put you in mind of the great benefits of it; as first, that by this trusting upon God, you engage and bind him to provide for you. Men, you know, think themselves highly concern'd not to fail those that depend and trust upon them; and certainly God doth so much more. But then secondly, there is a great deal of ease and quiet in the practice of this duty, it delivers us from all those carkings

The benefits of trusting on God.

and immoderate cares which disquiet our minds, break our sleep, and gnaw even our very heart. I doubt not but those that have felt them, need not be told they are uneasie. But then methinks that uneasiness should make us forward to embrace the means for the removing of them, and so we see it too often doth in unlawful ones; men will cheat, and steal, and lie, and do any thing to deliver themselves from the fear of want. But alas, they commonly prove but deceitful remedies; they bring God's curse on us, and so are more likely to betray us to want, than to keep us from it. But if you desire a certain and unfailing cure for cares; take this of relying upon God.

59. For what should cause that Man to fear want that knows he hath one that cares for him, who is All-sufficient, and will not suffer him to want what is fit for him? If a poor Man had but a faithful promise from a wealthy Person that he would never suffer him to want, it is sure he would be highly cheared with it, and would not then think fit to be as carking as he was before: and yet a Man's promise may fail us, he may either grow poor and not be able, or he may prove false and not be willing to make good his word. But we know, God is subject neither to impoverishing nor deceit. And therefore how vile an injury do we offer to him, if we dare not trust as much upon his promise as we would that of a man? Yea, and how great a mischief do we do our selves by loading our minds with a multitude of vexatious and tormenting cares, when we may so securely *cast our burden upon God*? I conclude this in the words of the Apostle, *Phil.* 4. 8. *Be careful*

careful in nothing, but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known to God.

SUNDAY II.

Of Humility, of Submission to Gods Will in respect of Obedience; of Patience in all sorts of sufferings, and of Honour due to God in several ways, in his House, Possession, his Day, Word, Sacraments, &c.

Sect. 1. A SIXTH Duty to God is HUMILITY, that is, such a sense of our own meanness and his excellency, as may work in us lowly and unfeigned submission to him: this submission is twofold; first, to his Will; secondly, to his Wisdom. *Humility.*

2. The submission to his Will is also of two sorts, the submission either of obedience or patience; that of obedience is our ready yielding our selves up to do his will, so that when God hath by his command made known to us what his pleasure is, chearfully and readily to set about it. To enable us to this, humility is exceeding necessary; for a proud per- *Submission to Gods will in respect of obedience.*

ſon is of all others the unapteſt to obey, and we ſee Men never pay an obedience but where they acknowledge the perſon commanding to be ſome way above them, and ſo it is here. If we be not throughly perſwaded that God is infinitely above us, that we are vileneſs and nothing in compariſon of him, we ſhall never pay our due obedience.

3. Therefore if ever you mean to obey intirely (as you muſt if ever you mean to be ſaved) get your hearts poſſeſt with the ſenſe of that great unſpeakable diſtance that is between God and you. Conſider him as he is a God of infinite Majeſty and glory; and we poor worms of the earth; he infinite in power, able to do all things, and we able to do nothing, not ſo much as to make one *hair white or black*, as our Saviour ſpeaks, *Mat.* 5. 36. He of infinite purity and holineſs, and we polluted and defiled, wallowing in all kinds of ſins and uncleanneſs; he unchangeable and conſtant, and we ſubject to change and alteration every minute of our lives. He Eternal and Immortal, and we frail mortals, that whenever he *taketh away our breath we die and are turned again to our duſt*, *Pſalm* 104. 29. Conſider all this, I ſay, and you cannot but acknowledge a wide difference between God and Man, and therefore may well cry out with *Job*, after he had approacht ſo near to God, as to diſcern ſomewhat of his excellency, *Job* 42. 56. *Now mine eye ſeeth thee, wherefore I abhor my ſelf and repent in duſt and aſhes.*

The great diſtance between God and us.

4. And

4. And even when this Humility hath brought us to obedience, it is not then to be caſt off, as if we had no farther uſe of it; for there is ſtill great uſe, nay neceſſity of it, to keep us from any high conceits of our performances, which if we once entertain, it will blaſt the beſt of them, and make them utterly unacceptable to God; like the ſtrictneſs of the *Phariſee*, which when once he came to boaſt of, the *Publican* was preferred before him, *Luke* 18. The beſt of our works are ſo full of infirmity and pollution, that if we compare them with that perfection and purity which is in God, we may truly ſay with the *Prophet*, *All our righteouſneſſes are as filthy rags*, *Iſaiah* 64. 6: and therefore to pride our ſelves in them, is the ſame madneſs, that it would be in a beggar to brag of his apparel, when it is nothing but vile rags and tatters. Our Saviour's precept in this matter muſt always be remembred, *Luke* 17. 10. *When you have done all thoſe things which are commanded you, ſay, We are unprofitable ſervants*; if when we have done all, we muſt give our ſelves no better a title, what are we then to eſteem our ſelves, that are ſo far from doing any conſiderable part of what we are commanded? Surely that worſer name of *ſlothful* and *wicked ſervant*, *Matth.* 25. 26. we have no reaſon to think too bad for us.

The unworthineſs of our beſt works.

5. A ſecond ſort of Submiſſion to His Will, is that of Patience; this ſtands in ſuffering his Will, as that of obedience did in acting it, and is nothing elſe but a willing and

Submiſſion in reſpect of Patience.

quiet yielding to whatever afflictions it pleases God to lay upon us. This the forementioned humility will make easie to us, for when our hearts are throughly possest with that reverence and esteem of God, it will be impossible for us to grudge or murmur at whatever he does. We see an instance of it in Old *Eli*, 1 *Sam.* 3. who after he had heard the sad threatnings of God against him, of the destruction of his Family, the loss of the Priesthood, the cutting off both his Sons in one Day, which were all of them afflictions of the heavieſt kind, yet this one consideration that it was the Lord, enabled him calmly and quietly to yield to them; saying, *Let him do what seemeth him good*, Verse 18. The same effect it had on *David*, in his suffering, *Psalm* 39. 9. *I was dumb, I opened not my mouth, because thou didst it.* God's doing it silenced all murmurings and grumblings in him. And so must it do in us, in all our afflictions, if we will indeed approve our humility to God.

6. For surely you will not think that child hath due humility to his Parent, or that servant to his Master, that when they are corrected, shall flie in the Father's or Master's face. But this do we whenever we grudge and repine at that which God lays upon us. But besides the want of Humility in our so doing, there is also a great want of justice in it; for God hath, as we are his creatures, a Right to do with us what he will, and therefore for us to resist that right of his, is the highest injustice that can be; nay, farther, it is also the greatest folly in the World, for it is only our good that God aims at in afflicting us; that hea-

heavenly Father is not like our earthly ones, who ſometime correct their children only to ſatisfie their own angry humour, not to do them good. But this is ſubject to no ſuch frailties. *He doth not afflict willingly, nor grieve the children of men*, *Lam.* 3. 33. They are our ſins which do not only give him juſt cauſe, but even force and neceſſitate him to puniſh us. He carries to us the bowels and affections of the tendereſt Father: now when a Father ſees his child ſtubborn and rebellious, and running on in a courſe that will certainly undo him, what greater act of Fatherly kindneſs can he do than chaſten and correct him; to ſee if by that means he may amend him; nay indeed he could not be ſaid to have true kindneſs to him if he ſhould not. And thus it is with God when he ſees us run on in ſin, either he muſt leave off to love us, and ſo leave us to our ſelves to take our own courſe, and that is the heavieſt curſe that can befal any Man; or elſe if he continue to love us, he muſt correct and puniſh us to bring us to amendment. Therefore whenever he ſtrikes, we are in all reaſon, not only patiently to lie under his rod, but (as I may ſay) kiſs it alſo; that is, be very thankful to him, that he is pleaſed not to *give us over to our own hearts luſts*, Pſal. 18. 12. but ſtill continues his care of us; ſends afflictions, as ſo many meſſengers to call us home to himſelf. You ſee then how groſs a folly it is to murmur at thoſe ſtripes which are meant ſo graciouſly; it is like that of a froward Patient, which reproaches and reviles the Phyſician that comes

Thankfulneſs for God's corrections.

comes to cure him, and if such a one be left to die of his disease, every one knows whom he is to thank for it.

Fruitfulness under them.

7. But it is not only quietness, no nor thankfulness neither under afflictions, that is the full of our Duty in this matter; we must have fruitfulness also, or all the rest will stand us in no stead. By fruitfulness I mean the bringing forth that, which the afflictions were sent to work in us, *viz.* the amendment of our lives. To which purpose in time of affliction it is very necessary for us to call our selves to an account, to examine our hearts and lives, and search diligently what Sins lye upon us, which provoked God thus to smite us, and whatsoever we find our selves guilty of, humbly to confess to God, and immediately to forsake for the rest of our time.

In all sorts of sufferings.

8. All I shall add concerning this duty of patience, is, that we are as much bound to it in one sort of sufferings, as another, whether our sufferings be so immediately from God's hand, that no creature hath any thing to do in it, as sickness, or the like; or whether it be such, wherein Men are the instruments of afflicting us. For it is most sure when any Man doth us hurt, he could not do it without God's permission and sufferance, and God may as well make them the instruments of punishing us, as do it more directly by himself, and it is but a counterfeit patience, that pretends to submit to God, and yet can bear nothing

thing from Men; we ſee holy *Job*, who is ſet forth to us as a pattern of true patience, made no ſuch difference in his afflictions; he took the loſs of his Cattle, which the *Chaldeans* and *Sabeans* robb'd him of, with the very ſame meekneſs with which he did that which was conſumed by fire from Heaven. When therefore we ſuffer any thing from Men, be it never ſo unjuſtly in reſpect of them, we are yet to confeſs it is moſt juſt in reſpect of God: and therefore inſtead of looking upon them with rage and revenge, as the common cuſtom of the world is, we are to look up to God, acknowledge his Juſtice in the affliction, begging his pardon moſt earneſtly for thoſe ſins, which have provoked him to ſend it, and patiently and thankfully bear it, till he ſhall ſee fit to remove it; ſtill ſaying with *Job*, *Bleſſed be the Name of the Lord.*

Submiſſion to God's wiſdom.

9. But I told you Humility contained in it a ſubmiſſion not only to his Will but alſo to his Wiſdom; that is, to acknowledge him infinitely Wiſe, and therefore that whatever he doth, is beſt and fitteſt to be done. And this we are to confeſs both in his commands, and in his Diſpoſing and ordering of things. Firſt, whatſoever he commands us either to believe or do, we are to ſubmit to his Wiſdom in both, to believe whatſoever he bids us believe, how impoſſible ſoever it ſeems to our ſhallow underſtandings, and to do whatever he commands us to do, how contrary ſoever it be to our fleſhly Reaſon or humour, and in both to conclude,

In his commands.

that

that his Commands are moſt fit and Reaſonable however they appear to us.

In his diſpoſals.

10 Secondly, We are to ſubmit to his Wiſdom in reſpect of his Diſpoſal and ordering of things; to acknowledge he diſpoſes all things moſt Wiſely, and that not only in what concerns the World in general; but alſo in what concerns every one of us in particular; ſo that in what condition ſoever he puts us, we are to aſſure our ſelves it is that which is beſt for us, ſince he chuſes it for us who cannot erre. And therefore never to have impatient deſires of any thing in this World, but to leave it to God to fit us with ſuch an eſtate and condition as he ſees beſt for us, and there let us quietly and contentedly reſt; yea, though it be ſuch as of all others we ſhould leaſt have wiſh'd for our ſelves. And this ſurely cannot but appear very reaſonable to any that hath humility: for that having taught him, that God is infinitely wiſe, and he very fooliſh, he can never doubt but that it is much more for his good that God ſhould chuſe for him than he for himſelf; even as it is much more for the childs good to have the Parent chuſe for it, than to be left to thoſe ſilly choices it would make for it ſelf. For how many times would it cut, and burn, and miſchief it ſelf if it might have every thing it deſires? And ſuch children are we, we many times eagerly deſire thoſe things which would undo us if we had them. Thus many times we wiſh for Wealth, Honour, and Beauty, and the like, when if we had them they would only prove ſnares to us, we ſhould be drawn

drawn into ſin by them. And this God, who knows all things, ſees, though we do not, and therefore often denies us thoſe things which he ſees will tend to our miſchief, and it is his abundant mercy that he doth ſo. Let us therefore whenever we are diſappointed of any of our aims and wiſhes, not only patiently but joyfully ſubmit to it, as knowing that it is certainly beſt for us, it being choſen by the unerring wiſdom of our heavenly Father.

11. A ſeventh Duty to God is HONOUR, that is, the paying him ſuch a reverence and reſpect as belongs to ſo great a Majeſty. And this is either inward or outward. The inward is the exalting him in our hearts, having always the higheſt and moſt excellent eſteem of him. The outward is the manifeſting and ſhewing forth that inward; and that is the firſt general in the whole courſe of our lives, the living like Men that do indeed carry that high eſteem of God. Now you know if we bear any ſpecial Reverence but to a Man, we will be careful not to do any foul or baſe thing in his preſence; and ſo if we do indeed honour God, we ſhall abhor to do any unworthy thing in his ſight. But God ſees all things, and therefore there is no way to ſhun the doing it in his ſight if we do it at all; therefore if we do thus reverence him, we muſt never at any time do any ſinful thing. *Honour.*

12. But beſides this general way of honouring God, there are many particular acts by which we may honour him, and theſe acts are di- *Several ways of honouring God.*

vers

vers according to the ſeveral particulars about which they are exerciſed. For we are to pay this honour not only immediately to himſelf, but alſo by a due eſtimation and account of all thoſe things that nearly relate or belong to him. Thoſe are eſpecially ſix; firſt, his Houſe; ſecondly, his Revenue or income (as I may ſay) thirdly, his Day; fourthly, his Word; fifthly his Sacraments, and ſixthly, his Name; and every one of theſe is to have ſome degree of our Reverence and Eſteem.

In his Houſe.

13. Firſt, his Houſe, that is, the Church, which being the place ſet apart for his publick worſhip, we are to look on it, though not as holy in reſpect of it ſelf, yet in reſpect of its uſe, and therefore muſt not prophane it by imploying it to uſes of our own. This Chriſt hath taught us by that act of his, *Matth.* 21. 12. in driving the buyers and ſellers out of the Temple, ſaying, *My houſe is called the houſe of Prayer*: And again, *John* 2. 16. *Make not my Fathers houſe a houſe of Merchandize.* By which it is clear, Churches are to be uſed only for the ſervices of God, and we are to make that the only end of our coming thither; and not to come to Church as to a Market to make bargains or diſpatch buſineſſes with our Neighbours, as is too common among many. But when ever thou entreſt the Church, remember that it is the Houſe of God, a place where he is in an eſpecial manner preſent, and therefore take the counſel of the wiſe Man, *Eccleſ.* 5. 1. and *keep thy foot when thou goeſt into the houſe of God*; that is, behave thy ſelf with that godly awe and reverence which

which belongs to that great Majesty thou art before. Remember that thy business there is to converse with God, and therefore shut out all thoughts of the world, even of thy most lawful business, which though they be allowable at another time, are here sinful. How fearful a guilt is it then to entertain any such thoughts as are in themselves wicked? It is like the treason of *Judas*, who pretended indeed to come to kiss his Master, but brought with him a band of Souldiers to apprehend him, *Matth.* 26. We make shew in our coming to Church, of serving and worshipping God, but we bring with us a train of his enemies to provoke and despite him. This is a wickedness that may outvie the prophaneness of these days, in turning Churches into Stables; for sinful and polluted thoughts are much the worse sort of Beasts.

His possessions.

14. The second thing to which respect belongs, is his Revenue or Income; that is, whatsoever is his peculiar possessions, set apart for the maintenance of those that attend his Service; those were the Priests in time of the Law, and Ministers of the Gospel now with us. And whatever is thus set apart, we must look on with such respect as not to dare to turn it to any other use. Of this sort some are the free-will-offerings of Men, who have sometimes of their own accord given some of their Goods or Land to this Holy use; and whatsoever is so given, can neither by the person that gave, nor any other be taken away, without that great sin of Sacriledge.

15 But

15. But beſides theſe, there was among the *Jews*, and hath always been in all Chriſtian Nations, ſomething allotted by the Law of the Nation for the ſupport and maintenance of thoſe that attend the ſervice of God. And it is but juſt and neceſſary it ſhould be ſo, that thoſe who by undertaking that Calling are taken off from the ways of gaining a livelihood in the World, ſhould be provided for by them whoſe ſouls they watch over. And therefore it is moſt reaſonable, which the Apoſtle urges in this matter, 1 *Cor.* 9. 11. *If we have ſown unto you ſpiritual things, is it a great thing if we ſhall reap your carnal things?* That is, it is moſt unreaſonable for Men to grudge the beſtowing a few carnal things, the outward neceſſaries of this temporal life, on them from whom they receive ſpiritual things, even inſtruction and aſſiſtance towards the obtaining of an eternal life.

The great ſin of Sacriledge.

16. Now whatſoever is thus appointed for this uſe, may by no means be employed to any other. And therefore thoſe Tithes which are here by Law allotted for the maintenance of the Miniſtry muſt by no means be kept back, nor any tricks or ſhifts uſed to avoid the payment either in whole or in part. For firſt, it is certain, that it is as truly theft as any other robbery can be, Miniſters having right to their Tithes by the ſame Law which gives any other Man right to his eſtate. But then ſecondly, it is another manner of robbery than we think of, it is a robbing of God, whoſe Service they were given to maintain; and that you may not doubt

doubt the truth of this, it is no more than God himself hath said of it, *Mal.* 3. 8. *Will a man rob God? yet ye have robbed me; yet ye say, Wherein have we robbed thee? In Tithes and Offerings.* Here it is most plain that in God's account the withholding Tithes is a robbing of him. And if you please you may in the next verse see what the gain of this robbery amounts to, *Ye are cursed with a curse.* A curse is all is gotten by it: and common experience shews us, that GOD'S vengeance doth in a remarkable manner pursue this sin of Sacriledge, whether it be that of withholding Tithes, or the other of seizing on those possessions, which have been voluntarily consecrated to God. Men think to enrich themselves by it, but it usually proves directly contrary; this unlawful gain becomes such a Canker in the estate, as often eats out even that we had a just title to. And therefore if you love (I will not say your souls, but) your estates, preserve them from that danger by a strict care never to meddle with any thing set apart for God. *The punishment.*

17. A third thing wherein we are to express our Reverence to God, is the hallowing of the Times, set apart for his Service. He who hath given all our time, requires some part of it to be paid back again as a rent or tribute of the whole. Thus the *Jews* kept holy the seventh day, and we Christians the Sunday or Lords day; the *Jews* were in their Sabbath especially to remember the creation of the world, and we in ours, the Resurrection of Christ, *The Times for his service.* *Lords day.*

Christ, by which a way is made for us into that better world we expect hereafter. Now this day thus set apart, is to be employed in the Worship and Service of God, and that first more solemnly and publickly in the Congregation, from which no Man must then absent himself without a just cause: and secondly, privately at home in praying with, and instructing our Families, or else in the yet more private duties of the closet; a Man's own private Prayers, Reading, Meditation, and the like.

And that we may be at leisure for these, a Rest from all worldly business is commanded; therefore let no Man think that a bare rest from labour is all that is required of him on the Lord's day, but the time which he saves from the works of his calling, he is to lay out on those spiritual duties. For the Lord's Day was never ordained to give us a pretence for idleness, but only to change our employment from worldly to heavenly, much less was it meant that by our rest from our callings we should have more time free to bestow upon our sins, as too many do, who are more constant on that day at the Ale-house than the Church. But this Rest was commanded, first to shadow out to us that Rest from sin which we are bound to all the days of our lives. And secondly, to take us off from our worldly business, and to give us time to attend the service of God, and the need of our souls.

18. And surely if we rightly consider it, it is a very great benefit to us that there is such a set time thus weekly returning for that purpose. We are very intent and busie upon the world, and

and if there were not some such time appointed to our hands, it is to be doubted we should hardly allot any our selves: and then what a starved condition must these poor souls of ours be in, that shall never be afforded a meal? Whereas now there is a constant Diet provided for them: every Sunday, if we will conscionably employ it, may be a Festival day to them, may bring them in such spiritual food, as may nourish them to eternal life. We are not to look on this day with grudging like those in *Amos* 8. 5. who ask, *When will the Sabbath be gone, that we may set forth wheat:* As if that time were utterly lost, which were taken from our worldly business. But we are to consider it, as the gainfullest, and the joyfullest day of the week, a day of harvest, wherein we are to lay up in store for the whole week, nay for our whole lives.

19. But besides this of the weekly Lord's day, there are other times which the Church hath set apart for the remembrance of some special mercies of God, such as the Birth and Resurrection of Christ, the descent of the Holy Ghost, and the like; and these days we are to keep in that manner which the Church hath ordered, to wit in the solemn worship of God, and in particular thanksgiving for that special blessing we then remember. And surely whosoever is truly thankful for those rich mercies, cannot think it too much to set apart some few days in a year for that purpose. *The feasts of the Church.*

But then we are to look that our Feasts be truly spiritual, by employing the day thus holily, and not

not make it an occasion of intemperance and disorder, as too many, who consider nothing in Christmas and other good-times, but the good cheer and jollity of them. For that is doing despight instead of honour to Christ, who came to bring all purity and soberness into the World, and therefore must not have that coming of his remembred in any other manner.

20. Other days there are also set apart in memory of the Apostles, and other Saints, wherein we are to give hearty thanks to God, for his graces in them; particularly that they were made instruments of revealing to us Christ *Jesus*, and the way of salvation, as you know the Apostles were by their Preaching throughout the World. And then farther, we are to meditate on those Examples of holy life, they have given us, and stir up our selves to the imitation thereof. And whoever does uprightly set himself to make these uses of these several Holy-days, will have cause by the benefit he shall find from them, to thank, and not to blame the Church for ordering them.

The Fasts.

21. Another sort of days there are, which we are likewise to observe, and those are days of Fasting and Humiliation; and whatever of this kind the Church injoyns, whether constantly at set times of the year, or upon any special and more sudden occasion, we are to observe in such manner as she directs, that is, not only a bare abstaining from Meat, which is only the Bodies punishment; but in afflicting our souls, humbling them deeply before God, in a hearty confessing, and bewailing of our own, and the Nations sins, and earnest

earneſt prayer for God's pardon and forgiveneſs, and for the turning away of thoſe judgments, which thoſe ſins have called for: but above all, in *turning our ſelves from our ſins, loſing the bands of wickedneſs*, as *Iſaiah* ſpeaks, Chap. 58. 6. and exerciſing our ſelves in works of mercy, *dealing our bread to the hungry*, and the like, as it there follows.

Gods word.

22. Fourthly, We are to expreſs our Reverence to God, by honouring his Word; and this we muſt certainly do if we do indeed honour him, there being no ſurer ſign of our deſpiſing any perſon than the ſetting light by what he ſays to us; as on the contrary, if we value One, every word he ſpeaks will be of weight with us. Now this Word of God is expreſly contained in the holy Scriptures, the Old and New Teſtament, where he ſpeaks to us, to ſhew us his Will and our Duty. And therefore to this Word of his, we are to bear a wonderful reſpect, to look upon it, as the rule by which we muſt frame all the actions of our life: and to that end to ſtudy it much, to read in it as often as we can, if it may be, never to let a day paſs us without reading or hearing ſome part of it read.

The holy Scriptures.

23. But then that is not all: we muſt not only read, but we muſt mark what we read, we muſt diligently obſerve, what Duties there are which God commands us to perform, what faults they are, which God there charges us not to commit, together with the rewards promiſed to the one, and the puniſhment threatned to the other. When we

we have thus marked, we must lay them up in our memory; not so loosely and carelessly that they shall presently drop out again; but we must so fasten them there by often thinking and meditating on them, that we may have them ready for our use. Now that use is the directing of our lives; and therefore whenever we are tempted to the committing of any evil, we are then to call to mind, This is the thing which in such a Scripture is forbidden by God, and all his vengeances threatned against it; and so in like manner when any opportunity is offered us of doing good, to remember, This is the duty which I was exhorted to in such a Scripture, and such glorious rewards promised to the doing of it; and by these considerations strengthen our selves for resistance of the evil and performance of the good.

24. But besides this of the written Word, it hath pleased God to provide yet farther for our instruction by his Ministers, whose office it is to teach us God's Will, not by saying any thing contrary to the written Word (for whatsoever is so, can never be God's Will) but by explaining it, and making it easier to our understandings, and then applying it to our particular occasions, and exhorting and stirring us up to the practice of it; all which is the end at which first their Catechizing and then their Preaching aimeth. And to this we are to bear also a due respect by giving diligent heed thereto, not only being present at Catechizings and Sermons, and either sleep out the time, or think of somewhat else, but carefully marking what is said to us. And surely if we did but rightly consider, how much it concerns

cerns us, we ſhould conclude it very reaſonable for us to do ſo.

25. For firſt, as to that of Catechizing, it is the laying the foundation upon which all Chriſtian practice muſt be built; for that is the teaching us our duty, without which it is impoſſible for us to perform it. And though it is true, that the Scriptures are the Fountains, from whence this knowledge of duty muſt be fetched, yet there are many who are not able to draw it from this Fountain themſelves, and therefore it is abſolutely neceſſary it ſhould be thus brought to them by others. *Catechizing.*

26. This catechizing is generally lookt upon as a thing belonging only to the youth, and ſo indeed it ought, not becauſe the oldeſt are not to learn, if they be ignorant, but becauſe all children ſhould be ſo inſtructed, that it ſhould be impoſſible for them to be ignorant when they come to years. And it nearly concerns every Parent, as they will free themſelves from the guilt of their childrens eternal undoing, that they be careful to ſee them inſtructed in all neceſſary things; to which purpoſe it will be fit early to teach them ſome ſhort Catechiſm, of which ſort none ſo fit as the Church Catechiſm; yet are they not to reſt on theſe endeavours of their own, but alſo to call in the Miniſters help, that he may build them up farther in Chriſtian knowledge.

27. But alas! It is too ſure that Parents have very much neglected this Duty, and by that means it is that ſuch multitudes of Men and Women, that are called Chriſtians, know no more of

we have thus marked, we must lay them up in our memory; not so loosely and carelessly that they shall presently drop out again; but we must so fasten them there by often thinking and meditating on them, that we may have them ready for our use. Now that use is the directing of our lives; and therefore whenever we are tempted to the committing of any evil, we are then to call to mind, This is the thing which in such a Scripture is forbidden by God, and all his vengeances threatned against it; and so in like manner when any opportunity is offered us of doing good, to remember, This is the duty which I was exhorted to in such a Scripture, and such glorious rewards promised to the doing of it; and by these considerations strengthen our selves for resistance of the evil and performance of the good.

24. But besides this of the written Word, it hath pleased God to provide yet farther for our instruction by his Ministers, whose office it is to teach us God's Will, not by saying any thing contrary to the written Word (for whatsoever is so, can never be God's Will) but by explaining it, and making it easier to our understandings, and then applying it to our particular occasions, and exhorting and stirring us up to the practice of it; all which is the end at which first their Catechizing and then their Preaching aimeth. And to this we are to bear also a due respect by giving diligent heed thereto, not only being present at Catechizings and Sermons, and either sleep out the time, or think of somewhat else, but carefully marking what is said to us. And surely if we did but rightly consider, how much it concerns

cerns us, we ſhould conclude it very reaſonable for us to do ſo.

25. For firſt, as to that of Catechizing, it is the laying the foundation upon which all Chriſtian practice muſt be built; for that is the teaching us our duty, without which it is impoſſible for us to perform it. And though it is true, that the Scriptures are the Fountains, from whence this knowledge of duty muſt be fetched, yet there are many who are not able to draw it from this Fountain themſelves, and therefore it is abſolutely neceſſary it ſhould be thus brought to them by others. *Catechizing.*

26. This catechizing is generally lookt upon as a thing belonging only to the youth, and ſo indeed it ought, not becauſe the oldeſt are not to learn, if they be ignorant, but becauſe all children ſhould be ſo inſtructed, that it ſhould be impoſſible for them to be ignorant when they come to years. And it nearly concerns every Parent, as they will free themſelves from the guilt of their childrens eternal undoing, that they be careful to ſee them inſtructed in all neceſſary things; to which purpoſe it will be fit early to teach them ſome ſhort Catechiſm, of which ſort none ſo fit as the Church Catechiſm; yet are they not to reſt on theſe endeavours of their own, but alſo to call in the Miniſters help, that he may build them up farther in Chriſtian knowledge.

27. But alas! It is too ſure that Parents have very much neglected this Duty, and by that means it is that ſuch multitudes of Men and Women, that are called Chriſtians, know no more of

Christ, or any thing that concerns their own Souls, than the meereſt Heathen.

28. But although it were their Parents fault that they were not inſtructed when they were young, yet it is now their own, if they remain ſtill ignorant; and it is ſure it will be their own ruine and miſery if they wilfully continue ſo. Therefore whoever he be, of what age or condition ſoever, that is in this ignorant eſtate, or in any ſuch degree of it, that he wants any part of neceſſary ſaving knowledge, let him as he loves his ſoul, as ever he would eſcape eternal damnation, ſeek out for inſtruction, and let no fear of ſhame keep any from it: for firſt it is certain the ſhame belongs only to the wilful continuing in ignorance, to which the deſire of learning is directly contrary, and is ſo far from a ſhameful, that it is a moſt commendable thing, and will be ſure to be ſo accounted by all wiſe and good Men. But ſecondly, ſuppoſe ſome prophane, ſenſeleſs people ſhould deride it, yet ſure that ſhame were in all reaſon to be undergone joyfully, rather than venture on that confuſion of face which will at the Day of Judgment befal thoſe who to avoid a little falſe ſhame amongſt Men, have gone on in a wilful ignorance of their duty, which ignorance will be ſo far from excuſing any ſins they ſhall commit, that it adds one great and heavy ſin to all the reſt, even the deſpiſing that knowledge which is offered to them. How hainous a ſin that is, you may learn in the firſt Chapter of the *Proverbs*, where *hating knowledge*, verſe 29. is ſaid to be the thing that draws down thoſe ſad vengeances forementioned, even God's forſaking Men, laughing

laughing at their calamity instead of helping them: which is of all other conditions in the World the most miserable; and surely they are madly desperate that will run themselves into it.

29. As for those who have already this foundation laid by the knowledge of the grounds of Christian Religion, there is yet for them a farther help provided by Preaching. And it is no more than needs, for, God knows, those that understand their duty well enough are too apt to forget it; nay, sometimes by the violence of their own lusts to transgress it even when they do remember it, and therefore it is very useful we should be put in mind of it to prevent our forgetting, and also often exhorted and assisted to withstand those lusts which draw us to those transgressions. And to these purposes preaching is intended, first, to warn us to be upon our guard against our spiritual enemy, and then to furnish us with weapons for the fight; that is, such means and helps as may best enable us to beat off temptations and get the victory over them. *Preaching.*

30. Since therefore this is the end of Preaching, we must not think we have done our duty when we have heard a Sermon, though never so attentively, but we must lay up in our hearts those instructions and advices we there meet with, and use them faithfully to that end of overcoming our sins. Therefore when ever thou comest to the Physician of thy Soul, do as thou wouldst with the Physician of thy Body; thou comest to him not only to hear him talk and tell thee what will cure thee, but also to do accord-

ing to his directions: and if thou doſt not ſo here, thou art as vain as he that expects a bare receipt from his Doctor ſhould cure him, though he never make uſe of it. Nay, thou art much more vain and ridiculous, for that, though it do him no good, will do him no harm, he ſhall never be the worſe, for having been taught a Medicine, though he uſe it not: but in theſe Spiritual Receipts it is otherwiſe; if we uſe them not to our good, they will do us a great deal of harm, they will riſe up in Judgment againſt us, and make our condemnation ſo much the heavier. Beware therefore not to bring that danger upon thy ſelf, but when thou haſt heard a Sermon, conſider with thy ſelf what directions there were in it for enabling thee to eſchew evil, or to do good. And if there were any thing eſpecially concern'd thine own boſom ſin, lay that cloſe to thy heart, and all the week after make it matter of meditation: think of it even whileſt thou art at thy work, if thou wanteſt other time; and not only think of it, but ſet to the practice of it, do what thou wert adviſed to, for the ſubduing ſins, and quicken grace in thee. Finally, look carefully to practiſe the counſel of the Apoſtle, *Jam.* 1. 22. *Be ye doers of the Word, not hearers only, deceiving your own ſouls.* To hope for good from the Word without doing it, is, it ſeems, nothing but a deceiving our ſelves: Let us never therefore meaſure our godlineſs by the number of Sermons which we hear, as if the hearing many were the certain mark of a good Chriſtian: but by the ſtore of fruit we bring forth by them, without which all our hearing will ſerve but to

bring

bring us into that heavier portion of ſtripes, which belongs to him that *knows his Maſters will and does it not, Luke* 12. 47. But this reverence which is due to Preaching we muſt not pay to all that is now-adays called ſo, for God knows there are many *falſe Prophets gone out into the world*, as the Apoſtle ſpeaks, 1 *John* 4. 1. And now, if ever, is that advice of his neceſſary, *To try the ſpirits whether they be of God.* But what I have ſaid, I mean only of the Preaching of thoſe who firſt have a lawful calling to the Office, and ſecondly frame their doctrine according to the right rule, the written Word of God. But if any man ſay, he is not able to judge whether the Doctrine be according to the Word or no, let him at leaſt try it by the common known rules of duty which he doth underſtand, and if he find it a doctrine giving Men liberty to commit thoſe things which are by all acknowledged ſins, ſuch as Rebellion, Injuſtice, Unmercifulneſs, Uncleanneſs, or the like, he may conclude, it is utterly contrary to God and his Word, and then abhorrence, and not reverence belongs to it.

The Sacrament.

31. Fifthly, we are to expreſs our honouring of God by reverencing his Sacraments: thoſe are two, Baptiſm, and the Supper of the Lord. And this we are to do, Firſt, by our high eſteem of them. Secondly, by our reverent uſage of them: we are firſt to prize them at a high rate, looking on them, as the inſtruments of bringing to us the greateſt bleſſings we can receive. The firſt of them, Baptiſm, that enters us into covenant with God, makes us members of Chriſt,

and so gives us right to all those precious benefits, that flow from him, to wit, pardon of sins, sanctifying grace, and Heaven it self, upon condition we perform our parts of the Covenant. And as for the Lords Supper, that is not only a sign and remembrance of Christ and his Death; but it is actually the giving Christ, and all the fruits of his Death to every worthy Receiver; and therefore there is a most high estimation, and value due to each of them.

Of Baptism.

32. And not only so, but in the second place we must shew our reverence in our usage of them; and that first, Before; secondly, At; thirdly, After the time of Receiving them. It is true that the Sacrament of Baptism being now administred to us, when we are Infants, it is not to be expected of us, that we should in our own persons do any thing, either before or at the time of receiving it; those performances were strictly required of all persons, who were Baptized when they were of years. But for us, it suffices to give us this right to Baptism, that we are born within the pale of the Church, that is, of Christian Parents; and all that is required at that time is, what we can only perform by others, they in our stead promising that when we come to years we will perform our parts of the Covenant. But by how much the less we are then able to do so much, the greater bond lies on us to perform those after-duties required of us, by which we are to supply the want of the former.

33. Now if you would know what thoſe duties are, look over thoſe promiſes which your Godfathers and Godmothers then made in your name, and you may then learn them. I cannot give you them in a better form than that of our Churches Catechiſm, which tells us, *That our Godfathers and Godmothers did promiſe and vow three things in our names*; firſt, *that we ſhould forſake the Devil and all his works, the pomps and vanities of this wicked world, and all the ſinful luſts of the fleſh.* Where by the Devil, is meant, firſt, the worſhipping of all falſe gods, which is indeed but worſhipping the Devil: A ſin which at the time of Chriſt's coming into the World was very common, moſt part of Mankind then living in that vile idolatry. And therefore when Baptiſm was firſt ordained, it was but needful to make the forſaking of thoſe falſe Gods a principal part of the vow. And though thoſe falſe worſhips are now much rarer, yet there was one ſpecial part of them, which may be feared to be yet too common among us, and that is all ſorts of uncleanneſs, which though we do not make Ceremonies of our Religion, as the Heathens did of theirs, yet the committing thereof is a moſt high provocation in God's eyes, ſuch as drew him to deſtroy whole *Cities with fire and brimſtone*, as you may read, *Gen.* 19. nay, the *whole world with water*, *Gen.* 6. and will not fail to bring down judgments, and ſtrange ones, on any that continue therein; and therefore the forſaking them well deſerves to be lookt on as an eſpecial part of this promiſe. Beſides this, all

The vow of Baptiſm.

dealing with the Devil is here vowed againſt, whether it be by practiſing Witchcraft our ſelves, or conſulting with thoſe that do, upon any occaſion whatever, as the recovery of our health, our goods, or whatever elſe: for this is a degree of the former ſin, it is the forſaking of the Lord, and ſetting up the Devil for our God, whilſt we go to him in our needs for help.

34. But we alſo renounce all the works of the Devil; and thoſe are either in general all thoſe that the Devil tempts us to, or elſe thoſe particular kinds of ſin which have moſt of his image on them; that is, thoſe which he himſelf moſt practiſes, ſuch are Pride (which brought him from being an Angel of light to the accurſed condition he is now in) and Lying; he is, as our Saviour ſaith, *John* 8. 44. *A Lyer, and the Father of it*; and ſuch alſo are Malice and Envy, eſpecially Killing and Deſtroying of others, for he was a *murderer from the beginning*, *John* 8. 44. But above all there is nothing wherein we become ſo like him, as in Tempting and drawing others to ſin, which is his whole trade and buſineſs, and if we make it any part of ours, we become like that *roaring Lyon, that goes about ſeeking whom he may devour*, 1 Pet. 5. 8.

35. The ſecond thing we Vow to forſake, is the *Pomps and Vanities of this wicked world*. By the pomps and vanities there are ſeveral things meant; ſome of them ſuch as were uſed by the Heathens in ſome Unlawful ſports of theirs, wherein we are not now ſo much concern'd, there being none of them remaining among us; but beſides that, there is meant all exceſs, either in

in Diet, or Sports, or Apparel, when we keep not those due measures, which either by the general rules of sobriety, or the particular circumstances of our qualities and callings we are bound to. Next, by the wicked World, we may understand, first, the wealth and greatness of the World, which though we do not so totally renounce, that it is unlawful for a Christian to be either Rich or Great, yet we thus far promise to forsake them, that we will not set our hearts upon them, nor either get or keep them by the least unlawful means. Secondly, by the wicked World, we may understand the companies and customs of the World, which so far as they are wicked, we here renounce; that is, we promise never to be drawn by company to the commission of a sin, but rather to forsake the most delightful company than to be ensnared by it; nor yet by custom, but rather venture the shame of being thought singular, ridiculous persons, walk as it were in a Path by our selves, than put our selves into that *broad way that leads to destruction*, by giving our selves over to any sinful custom how common soever it be grown. If this part of our vow were but throughly considered, it would arm us against most of the temptations the World offers us, company and custom being the two special instruments by which it works on us.

36. A third thing we renounce, is all the sinful lusts of the flesh; where the flesh is to be understood in that sence wherein the Scripture often uses it, for the fountain of all disordered affections. For though those unclean desires which we ordinarily call the lusts of the flesh are

here meant, yet they are not the only things here contained, there being divers other things which the Scripture calls the *works of the flesh*; I cannot better inform you of them than by setting down the list S. *Paul* gives of them, *Gal.* 5. 19, 20, 21. *Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these, adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings and such like.* This with those other descriptions, you will find scattered in several places of Scripture, will shew you there are many things contained in this part of your vow, the forsaking all the sinful lusts of the flesh.

37. The second thing our Godfathers and Godmothers promised for us, was, that *we should believe all the Articles of the Christian Faith.* These we have summed up together in that which we call the Apostles Creed, which since we promise to believe, we are supposed also to promise to learn them, and that not only the words, but likewise the plain sence of them: for who can believe what he either never heard of, or knows not any thing of the meaning of it? Now by this believing is meant not only the consenting to the truth of them, but also the living like them that do believe: As for example, our believing that God created us should make us live in that subjection and Obedience to him, which becomes Creatures to their Creator; the believing that Christ Redeemed us, should make us yield up our selves to him as his purchase, to be disposed wholly by him, and imployed only in his

his service. The believing a judgment to come, should give us care so to walk that we may not be condemned in it. And our believing the life everlasting, should make us diligent so to employ our short moment of time here, that our everlasting life may be a life of joy, not of misery to us. In this manner from all the articles of the Creed, we are to draw Motives to confirm us in all Christian Practice, to which end it is that our learning and believing of them tends, and therefore without it we are very far from making good this part of our Vow, the *believing all the Articles of the Christian Faith.*

38. The last part of our Vow is, that we *should keep God's holy will and Commandments, and walk in the same all the days of our lives.* Where by *our keeping God's holy will and Commandments,* is meant our doing of all those things, which he hath made known to us to be his will we should perform; wherein he hath given us his holy Word to instruct us, and teach us, what it is that he requires of us, and now he expects that we should Faithfully do it without favouring our selves in the breach of any one of his commands. And then in this entire obedience, we must walk *all the days of our lives:* that is, we must go on in a constant course of obeying God: not only fetch some few steps in his ways, but walk in them, and that not for some part of our time, but *all the days of our lives,* never turn out of them, but go on constantly in them, as long as we live in this World.

The first obligation of this Vow of Baptism.

39. Having now thus briefly explained to you this Vow made at your BAPTISM, all I shall add concerning it, is only to remember you how nearly you are concern'd in the keeping it: and that first in respect of justice, secondly, in respect of advantage and benefit. That you are in justice bound to it, I need say no more but that it is a promise, and you know justice requires of every Man the keeping of his promise. But then this is of all other promises the most solemn and binding, for it is a vow, that is, a promise made to God; and therefore we are not only unjust, but forsworn, whenever we break any part of it.

40. But secondly, we are also highly concern'd to keep it, in respect of our own benefit. I told you before, that Baptism entred us into Covenant with God; now a Covenant is made up of two parts, that is, something promised by the one party, and something by the other of the parties that make the Covenant. And if one of them break his part of the Covenant, that is, perform not what he hath agreed to, he can in no reason look that the other should make good his. And so it is here, God doth indeed promise those benefits before mentioned, and that is his part of the Covenant. But then we also undertake to perform the several things contained in this Vow of Baptism, and that is our part of it, and unless we do indeed perform them, God is not tied to make good his, and so we forfeit all those precious benefits and advantages,

tages, we are left in that natural and miserable estate of ours, *children of wrath, enemies to God, and heirs of eternal damnation.* And now what can be the pleasure that any or all sins can afford us, that can make us the least degree of recompence for such a loss, the loss of God's favour and grace here, and the loss of our own Souls hereafter? For as our Saviour saith, *Mark* 8. 36. *What shall it profit a man if he shall gain the whole world and lose his own soul?* Yet this mad bargain we make when ever we break any part of this our Vow of Baptism. It therefore most nearly concerns us to consider sadly of it, to remember that every sin we commit is a direct breach of this our Vow, and therefore when thou art tempted to any sin, seem it never so light, say not of it as *Lot* did of *Zoar*, *Gen.* 19. 20. *Is it not a little one?* But consider that whatever it is, thou hast in thy Baptism vowed against it, and then be it never so little, it draws a great one at the heels of it, no less than that of being forsworn, which whoever commits, God hath in the third Commandment pronounced, *He will not hold him guiltless.* And that we may the better keep this vow, it will be very useful often to repeat to our selves the several branches of it, that so we may still have it ready in our minds to set against all temptations; and surely it is so excellent a weapon, that if we do not either cast it aside, or use it very negligently, it will enable us by Gods help, to put to flight our spiritual adversary. And this is that reverence we are to pay to this first Sacrament, that of Baptism.

SUN-

SUNDAY III.

Of the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, Of preparation before, as examination; Of Repentance, Faith, Obedience, of duties to be done at the Receiving and afterwards, &c.

The Lords Supper.

Sect. 1. NOW follows the Reverence due to the Sacrament of the LORD'S SUPPER; and in this I must follow my first division, and set down first, what is to be done Before; secondly, At; and thirdly, After the time of Receiving; for in this Sacrament we cannot be excused from any one of these, though in the former we are.

Things to be done before receiving.

2. And first, for that which is to be done Before, S. *Paul* tells us it is Examination, 1 *Cor.* 11. 28. *But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread and drink of that Cup.* But before I proceed to the particulars of this Examination, I must in the general tell you, that the special business we have to do in this Sacrament, is to repeat and renew that Covenant we made with God in our Baptism, which we having

Examination.

having many ways grievously broken, it pleases God in his great mercy to suffer us to come to the renewing of it in this Sacrament, which if we do in sincerity of heart, he hath promised to accept us, and to give us all those benefits in this, which he was ready to bestow in the other Sacrament, if we had not by our own fault forfeited them. Since then the renewing of our Covenant is our business at this time, it follows that these three things are necessary towards it: First, that we understand what the Covenant is; Secondly, that we consider what our Breaches of it have been; and thirdly, that we resolve upon a strict observance of it, for the rest of our life. And the trying our selves in every one of these particulars is that examination which is required of us before we come to this Sacrament.

3. And First, we are to examine whether we understand what this Covenant is; this is exceeding necessary, as being the foundation of both the other, for it is neither possible to discover our past sins, nor to settle purposes against them for the future without it. Let this therefore be your first business. Try whether you rightly understand what that Covenant is which you entred into at your Baptism, what be the Mercies promised on God's part, and the Duties on yours. And because the Covenant made with each of us in Baptism is only the applying to our particulars the Covenant made by God in Christ with all Mankind in general, you are to consider whether you understand that; if you do not, you must immediately seek for instruction in it. And till you have means of gaining better,

better, look over what is briefly ſaid in the entrance to this Treatiſe, concerning the SECOND COVENANT, which is the foundation of that Covenant which God makes with us in our Baptiſm. And becauſe you will there find, that obedience to all God's Commands is the condition required of us, and is alſo that which we expreſly Vow in our Baptiſm, it is neceſſary you ſhould likewiſe know what thoſe Commands of God are. Therefore if you find you are ignorant of them, never be at reſt till you have got your ſelf inſtructed in them, and have gained ſuch a meaſure of knowledge as may direct you to do that *Whole Duty of Man* which God requires. And the giving thee this inſtruction is the only aim of this Book, which, the more ignorant thou art, the more earneſtly I ſhall intreat thee diligently to read. And if thou haſt heretofore approacht to this Holy Sacrament in utter ignorance of theſe neceſſary things, bewail thy ſin in ſo doing, but preſume not to come again till thou haſt by gaining this neceſſary knowledge fitted thy ſelf for it, which thou muſt haſten to do. For though no Man muſt come to the Sacrament in ſuch ignorance, yet if he wilfully continue in it, that will be no excuſe to him for keeping from this holy Table.

4. The ſecond part of our examination is concerning our breaches of this Covenant; and here thou wilt find the uſe of that knowledge I ſpake of. For there is no way of diſcovering what our Sins have been, but by trying our Actions by that which ſhould be the rule of them, the Law of God. When there-

Sins.

therefore thou ſetteſt to this part of Examination, remember what are the ſeveral branches of thy duty, and then ask thy own heart in every particular, how thou haſt performed it. And content not thy ſelf with knowing in general, that thou haſt broken God's Law, but do thy utmoſt to diſcover in what particulars thou haſt done ſo. Recall, as well as thou canſt, all the paſſages of thy life, and in each of them conſider what part of that duty hath been tranſgreſt by it. And that not only in the groſſer act, but in word alſo; nay, even in thy moſt ſecret thoughts: For though Man's Law reaches not to them, yet God's doth; ſo that whatever he forbids in the act, he forbids likewiſe in the thoughts and deſires, and ſees them as clearly as our moſt publick acts. This particular ſearch is exceeding neceſſary: for there is no promiſe of forgiveneſs of any ſin, but only to him that confeſſeth and forſaketh it. Now to both theſe it is neceſſary that we have a direct and particular knowledge of our ſins. For how can he either confeſs his Sin, that knows not his guilt of it? or how can he reſolve to forſake it, that diſcerns not himſelf to have formerly cleaved to it? Therefore we may ſurely conclude, that this Examination is not only uſeful but neceſſary towards a full and complete repentance; for he that does not take this particular view of his ſins, will be likely to repent but by halves, which will never avail him towards his pardon; nothing but an intire forſaking of every evil way, being ſufficient for that. But ſurely of all other

Several ſorts.

times

times it concerns us, that when we come to the Sacrament our repentance be full and complete; and therefore this ſtrict ſearch of our own hearts is then eſpecially neceſſary. For although it be true, that it is not poſſible by all our diligence to diſcover or remember every ſin of our whole lives, and though it be alſo true, that what is unavoidably hid from us, may be forgiven without any more particular confeſſion than that of *David*, Pſalm 19. 12. *Cleanſe thou me from my ſecret faults*; yet this will be no plea for us, if they come to be ſecret only, becauſe we are negligent in ſearching. Therefore take heed of deceiving thy ſelf in this weighty buſineſs, but ſearch thy ſoul to the bottom, without which it is impoſſible that the wounds thereof ſhould ever be throughly cured.

5. And as you are to enquire thus narrowly concerning the ſeveral ſorts of ſins, ſo alſo muſt you concerning the Degrees of them, for there are divers Circumſtances which increaſe and heighten the Sin. Of this ſort there are many; as firſt, when we ſin againſt knowledge, that is, when we certainly know ſuch a thing to be a ſin, yet for the preſent pleaſure or profit (or whatever other motive) adventure on it. This is by Chriſt himſelf adjudged to be a great heightning of the ſin, *He that knows his Maſters will and doth it not, ſhall be beaten with many ſtripes*, Luke 12. 47. Secondly, when we ſin with Deliberation, that is, when we do not fall into it of a ſudden, ere we are aware, but have time to conſider of it, this is another degree of the ſin. But thirdly, a yet higher is, when we do it againſt the Reſiſtances

ſiſtances and checks of our own Conſcience, when that at the time tells us, This thing thou oughteſt not to do: nay, lays before us the danger as well as the ſin of it, yet in ſpight of theſe admonitions of conſcience we go on and commit the ſin; this is a huge increaſe of it, ſuch as will raiſe the leaſt ſin into a moſt high provocation. For it is plain, a ſin thus committed muſt be a wilful one, and then be the matter of it never ſo light, it is moſt hainous in God's eyes. Nay this is a circumſtance of ſuch force, that it may make an indifferent action that is in it ſelf no ſin, become one. For though my Conſcience ſhould erre in telling me ſuch a thing were unlawful, yet ſo long as I were ſo perſwaded, it were ſin for me to do that thing: for in that caſe my Will conſents to the doing a thing which I believe to be diſpleaſing to God, and God (who judges us by our Wills, not Underſtandings) imputes it to me as a ſin, as well as if the thing were in it ſelf unlawful. And therefore ſurely we may conclude, that any thing which is in it ſelf ſinful, is made much more ſo by being committed againſt the checks of Conſcience. A fourth aggravation of a ſin is when it hath been often repeated, for then there is not only the guilt of ſo many more Acts, but every Act grows alſo ſo much worſe, and more inexcuſable. We always judge thus in faults committed againſt our ſelves, we can forgive a ſingle injury more eaſily than the ſame when it hath been repeated, and the oftner it hath been ſo repeated, the more hainous we account it. And ſo ſurely it is in faults againſt God alſo. Fifthly, the

the ſins which have been committed after Vows and reſolutions of amendment are yet more grievous: for that contains alſo the breaking of thoſe promiſes. Somewhat of this there is in every wilful ſin, becauſe every ſuch is a breach of that Vow we make at Baptiſm. But beſides that, we have ſince bound our ſelves by new vows, if at no other time, yet ſurely at our coming to the Lords Supper, that being (as was formerly ſaid) purpoſely to repeat our vows of Baptiſm. And the more of theſe vows we have made, ſo much the greater is our guilt, if we fall back to any ſin we then renounced. This is a thing very well worth weighing, and therefore examine thy ſelf particularly at thy approach to the Sacrament concerning thy breaches of former vows made at the Holy Table. And if upon any other occaſion, as ſickneſs, trouble of mind, or the like, thou haſt at any time made any other, call thy ſelf to a ſtrict account how thou haſt performed them alſo, and remember that every ſin committed againſt ſuch vows, is beſides its own natural guilt a Perjury likewiſe. Sixthly, a yet higher ſtep is, when a Sin hath been ſo often committed that we are come to a cuſtom and habit of it: and that is indeed a high degree.

6. Yet even of Habits ſome are worſe than others, as firſt, if it be ſo confirmed that we are come to a hardneſs of heart, have no ſenſe at all of the ſin: Or, ſecondly, if we go on in it againſt any extraordinary means uſed by God to reform us, ſuch as ſickneſs, or any other affliction which ſeems to be ſent on purpoſe for our reclaiming,

reclaiming. Or thirdly, if all Reproofs and Exhortations either of Miniſters or private friends work not on us, but either make us angry at our reprovers, or ſet us on defending the ſin. Or laſtly, if this ſinful Habit be ſo ſtrong in us as to give us a love to the ſin, not only in our ſelves but in others: if, as the Apoſtle ſaith, *Rom.* 1. 31. *We do not only do the things, but take pleaſure in them that do them*, and therefore intice and draw as many as we can into the ſame ſins with us: Then it is riſen to the higheſt ſtep of wickedneſs, and is to be lookt on as the utmoſt degree both of ſin and danger. Thus you ſee how you are to Examine your ſelves concerning your ſins, in each of which you are to conſider how many of theſe heightening circumſtances there have been, that ſo you may aright meaſure the hainouſneſs of them.

7. Now the end of this Examination is, to bring you to ſuch a ſight of your ſins, as may truly humble you, make you ſenſible of your own danger, that have provoked ſo great a Majeſty, who is able ſo ſadly to revenge himſelf upon you. And that will ſurely even to the moſt carnal heart appear a reaſonabe ground of ſorrow. But that is not all: it muſt likewiſe bring you to a ſenſe and abhorrence of your baſeneſs, and ingratitude, that have thus offended ſo good and gracious a God, that have made ſuch unworthy and unkind returns to thoſe tender and rich mercies of his. And this conſideration eſpecially muſt melt your hearts into a deep ſorrow and contrition, the degree whereof muſt be in *Humiliation.*

ſome

ſome meaſure anſwerable to the degree of your ſins. And the greater it is, provided it be not ſuch as ſhuts up the hope of God's Mercy, the more acceptable it is to God, who hath promiſed not to *deſpiſe a broken and a contrite heart*, Pſalm 51. 17. And the more likely it will be alſo to bring us to amendment: For if we have once felt what the ſmart of a wounded Spirit is, we ſhall have the leſs mind to venture upon ſin again.

8. For when we are tempted with any of the ſhort pleaſures of ſin, we may then out of our own experience ſet againſt them the ſharp pains and terrors of an accuſing conſcience, which will to any that hath felt them be able infinitely to outweigh them. Endeavour therefore to bring your ſelves to this melting temper, to this deep unfeigned ſorrow, and that not only for the danger you have brought upon your ſelf; for though that be a conſideration which may and ought to work ſadneſs in us, yet where that alone is the motive of our ſorrow, it is not that ſorrow which will avail us for pardon; and the reaſon of it is clear, for that ſorrow proceeds only from the love of our ſelves, we are ſorry becauſe we are like to ſmart. But the ſorrow of a true penitent muſt be joyned alſo with the love of God, and that will make us grieve for having offended him, though there were no puniſhment to fall upon our ſelves. The way then to ſtir up this ſorrow in us, is firſt, to ſtir up our love of God, by repeating to our ſelves the many gracious acts of his mercy towards us, particularly, that

Contrition.

that of his ſparing us, and not cutting us off in our ſins. Conſider with thy ſelf how many and how great provocations thou haſt offered him, perhaps in a continued courſe of many years wilful diſobedience, for which thou mighteſt with perfect juſtice have been ere this ſent quick into Hell: Nay poſſibly thou haſt before thee many examples of leſs ſinners than thou art, who have been ſuddenly ſnatcht away in the midſt of their ſins. And what cauſe canſt thou give, why thou haſt thus long eſcaped, but only becauſe His eye hath ſpared thee? And what cauſe of that ſparing, but his tender compaſſions towards thee, his unwillingneſs that thou ſhouldſt periſh? This conſideration if it be preſt home upon thy ſoul, cannot chuſe (if thy heart be not as hard as the nether Milſtone) but awake ſomewhat of love in thee towards this gracious, this long-ſuffering God, and that love will certainly make it appear to thee, that it is an *evil thing and bitter, that thou haſt forſaken the Lord, Jer.* 2. 19. That thou haſt made ſuch wretched requitals of ſo great mercy; it will make thee both aſhamed and angry at thy ſelf that thou haſt been ſuch an unthankful creature. But if the conſideration of this one ſort of mercy, God's forbearance only, be ſuch an engagement and help to this godly ſorrow, what will then be the multitude of thoſe other mercies which every Man is able to reckon up to himſelf? And therefore let every Man be as particular in it as he can, call to mind as many of them as he is able, that ſo he may attain to the greater degree of true contrition.

9. And to all theſe endeavours muſt be added earneſt

earneſt prayers to God, that he by his holy Spirit would ſhew you your ſins, and ſoften your hearts, that you may throughly bewail and lament them.

Confeſſion. 10. To this muſt be joyned an humble confeſſion of ſins to God, and that not only in general, but alſo in particular, as far as your memory of them will reach, and that with all thoſe heightning circumſtances of them, which you have by the forementioned examination diſcovered. Yea, even ſecret and forgotten ſins muſt in general be acknowledged, for it is certain there are multitudes of ſuch; ſo that it is neceſſary for every one of us to ſay with *David*, *Pſal.* 19. 12. *Who can underſtand his errors? Cleanſe thou me from my ſecret faults.* When you have thus confeſt your ſins with this hearty ſorrow, and ſincere hatred of them, you may then (and not before) be concluded to feel ſo much of your diſeaſe, that it will be ſeaſonable to apply the remedy.

Faith. 11. In the next place therefore you are to look on him whom God *hath ſet forth to be the propitiation for our ſins*, Rom. 3. 25. *Even Jeſus Chriſt, that Lamb of God, which taketh away the ſins of the world*, *John* 1. 29. And earneſtly beg of God, that by his moſt precious bloud your ſins may be waſhed away: and that God would for his ſake be reconciled to you. And this you are to believe will ſurely be done, if you do for the reſt of your time forſake your ſins, and give your ſelves up ſincerely to obey God in all his commands. But without that,

it

it is vain to hope any benefit from Christ, or his sufferings. And therefore the next part of your preparation must be the setting those resolutions of obedience, which I told you was the third thing you are to examine your selves of before your approach to the holy Sacrament.

Resolutions of Obedience.

Concerning the particulars of this Resolution, I need say no more, but that it must answer every part, and branch of our duty; that is, we must not only in general resolve that we will observe God's Commandments, but we must resolve it for every Commandment by it self; and especially where we have found our selves most to have failed heretofore, there especially to renew our resolutions. And herein it nearly concerns us to look that these resolutions be sincere and unfeigned, and not only such slight ones as people use out of custom to put on at their coming to the Sacrament, which they never think of keeping afterwards. For this is a certain truth, that whosoever comes to this holy Table without an entire hatred of every sin, comes unworthily; and it is as sure, that he that doth entirely hate all sin, will resolve to forsake it: for you know forsaking naturally follows hatred, no Man willingly abides with a thing or person he hates. And therefore he that doth not so resolve, as that God the searcher of hearts may approve it as sincere, cannot be supposed to hate sin, and so cannot be a worthy receiver of that holy Sacrament. Therefore try your resolutions throughly, that you deceive not your selves in them; it

is your own great danger if you do; for it is certain you cannot deceive God, nor gain acceptation from him by any thing which is not perfectly hearty and unfeigned.

Of the means.

13. Now as you are to resolve on this new obedience, so you are likewise to resolve on the means, which may assist you in the performance of it. And therefore consider in every duty what are the means that may help you in it, and resolve to make use of them, how uneasie soever they be to your flesh; so on the other side consider what things they are, that are likely to lead you to sin, and resolve to shun and avoid them: this you are to do in respect of all sins whatever, but especially in those, whereof you have formerly been guilty. For there it would not be hard for you to find, by what steps and degrees you were drawn into it, what Company, what Occasion it was that ensnared you, as also to what sort of Temptations you are aptest to yield. And therefore you must particularly fence your self against the sin, by avoiding those occasions of it.

14. But it is not enough that you resolve you will do all this hereafter, but you must instantly set to it, and begin the course by doing at the present whatsoever you have opportunity of doing. And there are several things, which you may, nay, must do at the present, before you come to the Sacrament.

Present renouncing of sin.

15. As first you must cast off every sin, not bring any one crucified lust with you to

that Table; for it is not enough to purpose to cast them off afterwards, but you must then actually do it by withdrawing all degrees of love and affection from them; you must then give a bill of divorce to all your old beloved lusts, or else you are in no way fit to be married to Christ. The reason of this is clear; for this Sacrament is our spiritual nourishment; now before we can receive spiritual nourishment we must have spiritual life, (for no Man gives food to a dead person.) But whosoever continues not only in the act, but in the love of any one known sin, hath no spiritual life, but is in God's account no better than a dead carkass, and therefore cannot receive that spiritual food. It is true, he may eat the Bread and drink the Wine, but he receives not Christ, but instead of him, that which is most dreadful; the Apostle will tell you what, 1 *Cor.* 11. 29. *He eats and drinks his own damnation.* Therefore you see how great a necessity lies on you thus actually to put off every sin, before you come to this Table.

16. And the same necessity lies on you for a second thing to be done at this time, and that is, the putting your soul into a heavenly and Christian temper; by possessing it with all those Graces which may render it acceptable in the eyes of God. For when you have turned out Satan and his accursed train, you must not let your soul be empty; if you do, Christ tells you, *Luke* 11. 26 he will *quickly return again, and your last estate shall be worse than your first.* But

Imbracing vertue.

you must by earnest prayer invite into it the holy Spirit with his Graces, or if they be in some degree there already, you must pray that he will yet more fully possess it, and you must quicken and stir them up.

Quickening of graces.

17. As for example, you must quicken your humility, by considering your many and great sins: your Faith, by meditating on Gods promises to all penitent sinners: your love to God, by considering his mercies, especially those remembred in the Sacrament, his giving Christ to die for us; and your love to your neighbour, nay to your enemies, by considering that great example of his suffering for us that were enemies to him. And it is most particularly required of us when we come to this Table, that we copy out this pattern of his in a perfect forgiveness of all that have offended us, and not only forgiveness, but such a kindness also as will express it self in all offices of love and friendship to them.

Charity.

18. And if you have formerly so quite forgot that blessed example of his, as to do the direct contrary; if you have done any unkindness or injury to any person, then you are to seek forgiveness from him: and to that end, first acknowledge your fault, and secondly restore to him, to the utmost of your power, whatsoever you have deprived him of, either in goods or credit. This Reconciliation with our brethren is absolutely necessary towards the making any of our services acceptable with God, as appears by that precept

of

of Christ, *Matth.* 5. 23, 24. *If thou bring thy gift to the Altar, and there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee, leave there thy gift before the Altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.* Where you see, that though the gift be already at the Altar, it must rather be left there unoffered, than be offered by a Man that is not at perfect peace with his neighbour. And if this charity be so necessary in all our services much more in this, where by a joynt partaking in the same holy mysteries, we signifie our being united and knit not only to Christ our head, but also to each other, as fellow-members. And therefore if we come with any malice in our hearts, we commit an act of the highest Hypocrisie, by making a solemn profession in the Sacrament of that charity and brotherly love, whereof our hearts are quite void.

Devotion.

29. Another most necessary grace at this time is that of Devotion, for the raising whereof we must allow our selves some time to withdraw from our worldly affairs, and wholly to set our selves to this business of preparation; one very special part of which preparation lies in raising up our souls to a devout and heavenly temper. And to that it is most necessary that we cast off all thoughts of the world, for they will be sure as so many clogs to hinder our souls in their mounting towards Heaven. A special exercise of this devotion is Prayer, wherein we must be very frequent and earnest at our coming to the Sacrament, this being one great instrument wherein

we must obtain all those other graces required in our preparation. Therefore be sure this be not omitted; for if you use never so much endeavour besides, and leave out this, it is the going to work in your own strength without looking to God for his help, and then it is impossible you should prosper in it: *For we are not able of our selves to think any thing, as of our selves, but our sufficiency is of God*, 2 Cor. 3. 5. Therefore be instant with him to assist you with his grace, that you may come so fitted to this Holy Table, that you may be partaker of the benefits there reached out to all worthy receivers.

Necessity of these graces.

20. These and all other spiritual Graces our Souls must be cloathed with when we come to this Feast; for this is that Wedding garment without which whosoever comes is like to have the entertainment mentioned in the Parable of him who came to the marriage without a *wedding garment*, Matth. 22. 13. *who was cast into utter darkness, where is weeping and gnashing of teeth*; though it is possible he may get it out at the present, and not be snatched from the Table, yet S. Paul assures him, *he drinks damnation to himself*; and how soon it may fall on him is uncertain: But it is sure, it will, if repentance prevent it not, and as sure that whenever it does come it will be *intolerable: for who among us can dwell with everlasting burnings?* Isa. 33. 14.

The use fulness of these spiritual guides.

21. I shall add but one thing more concerning the things which are to be done before the Sacrament, and that is an advice, that

if any person upon a serious view of himself cannot satisfie his own Soul of his sincerity, and so doubts whether he may come to the Sacrament, he do not rest wholly on his own judgment in the case; for if he be a truly humbled Soul, it is likely he may judge too hardly of himself; if he be not, it is odds, but if he be left to the satisfying of his own doubts, he will quickly bring himself to pass too favourable a sentence. Or whether he be the one or the other, if he comes to the Sacrament in that doubt, he certainly plunges himself into farther doubts and scruples, if not into sin; on the other side, if he forbear because of it, if that fear be a causeless one, then he groundlesly abstains himself from that Holy Ordinance, and so deprives his Soul of the benefits of it. Therefore in the midst of so many dangers which attend the mistake of himself, I would, as I said before, exhort him not to trust to his own judgment; but to make known his case to some discreet and Godly Minister, and rather be guided by his, who will probably (if the case be duly and without any disguise discovered to him,) be better able to judge of him than he of himself. This is the counsel the Church gives in the Exhortation before the Communion, where it is advised, that if any by other means there forementioned, *cannot quiet his own Conscience, but require farther counsel and comfort, then let him go to some discreet and learned Minister of Gods Word, and open his grief, that he may receive such ghostly counsel, advice and comfort, that his conscience may be relieved*, &c. This is surely such advice as should

not be neglected, neither at the time of coming to the Sacrament, nor any other, when we are under any fear or reasons of doubt concerning the state of our Souls. And for want of this, many have run into very great mischief, having let the doubt fester so long, that it hath either plunged them into deep distresses of Conscience, or which is worse, they have, to still that disquiet within them, betaken themselves to all sinful pleasures, and so quite cast off all care of their souls.

Not to be ashamed to discover our selves to one.

23. But to all this, it will perhaps be said, that this cannot be done without discovering the nakedness and blemishes of the soul, and there is shame in that, and therefore Men are unwilling to do it. But to that I answer, That it is very unreasonable that should be a hindrance. For first, I suppose you are to chuse only such a person as will faithfully keep any secret you shall commit to him, and so it can be no publick shame you can fear. And if it be in respect of that single person, you need not fear that neither; for supposing him a Godly man, he will not think the worse of you, but the better, that you are so desirous to set all right between God and your Soul. But if indeed there were shame in it, yet as long as it may be a means to cure both your trouble and your sin too (as certainly godly and faithful counsel may tend much to both) that shame ought to be despised, and it is sure it would, if we loved our Souls as well as our Bodies; for in bodily diseases, be they never

ver ſo foul or ſhameful, we count him a fool who will rather miſs the cure than diſcover it; and then it muſt here be ſo much a greater folly, by how much the ſoul is more precious than the body.

As neceſſary to the confident as to the doubtful.

13. But God knows it is not only doubtful perſons to whom this advice might be uſeful; there are others of another ſort, whoſe confidence is their diſeaſe, who preſume very groundleſly of the goodneſs of their eſtates: And for thoſe it were moſt happy, if they could be brought to hear ſome more equal judgments than their own in this ſo weighty a buſineſs. The truth is, we are generally ſo apt to favour our ſelves, that it might be very uſeful for the Moſt, eſpecially the more ignorant ſort, ſometimes to adviſe with a ſpiritual guide, to enable them to paſs right judgments on themſelves; and not only ſo, but to receive directions, how to ſubdue and mortifie thoſe ſins they are moſt inclined to, which is a matter of ſo much difficulty, that we have no reaſon to deſpiſe any means that may help us in it.

14. I have now gone through thoſe ſeveral parts of duty we are to perform *Before* our Receiving; in the next place, I am to tell you, what is to be done *At the time of Receiving*. When thou art at the holy Table, firſt humble thy ſelf in an unfeigned acknowledgment of thy great unworthineſs to be admitted there; and to that

At the time of Receiving. Meditation of thy unworthineſs.

purpose remember again between God and thine own Soul, some of thy greatest, and foulest sins, thy breaches of former Vows made at that Table, especially since thy last Receiving. Then meditate on those Bitter Sufferings of Christ which are set out to us in the Sacrament: when thou seest the Bread broken, remember how his blessed Body was torn with nails upon the Cross; when thou seest the Wine poured out, remember how his precious Blood was spilt there; and then consider, it was thy sins that caused both. And here think how unworthy a wretch thou art to have done that which occasioned such torments to Him: how much worse than his very crucifiers. They crucified him once, but thou hast, as much as in thee lay, crucified him daily. They crucified him because they knew him not, but thou hast known both what he is in himself, *The Lord of Glory*, and what he is to thee, a most tender and merciful Saviour, and yet thou hast still continued thus to crucifie him afresh. Consider this, and let it work in thee, first a great sorrow for thy sins past, and then a great hatred and a firm resolution against them for the time to come.

The sufferings of Christ.

25. When thou hast a while thus thought on these sufferings of Christ for the increasing thy humility and contrition; then in the second place think of them again, to stir up thy faith; look on him as the Sacrifice offered up for thy sins, for the appeasing of God's wrath, and procuring his favour and

The attonement wrought by them.

and mercies towards thee. And therefore believingly, yet humbly beg of God to accept of that Satisfaction made by his innocent and beloved Son, and for the merits thereof to pardon thee whatever is paſt, and to be fully reconciled to thee.

The thankfulneſs owing for them.

26. In the third place conſider them again to raiſe thy thankfulneſs. Think how much both of ſhame and pain he there endured, but eſpecially thoſe great agonies of his Soul; which drew from him that bitter cry, *My God, my God, why haſt thou forſaken me?* *Matth.* 27. 45. Now all this he ſuffered only to keep thee from periſhing. And therefore conſider what unexpreſſible thanks thou oweſt him; and endeavour to raiſe thy Soul to the moſt zealous and hearty thankſgiving: for this is a principal part of duty at this time, the praiſing and magnifying that mercy which hath redeemed us by ſo dear a price. Therefore it will here well become thee to ſay with *David*, *I will take the Cup of Salvation, and will call upon the Name of the Lord*

The great love of Chriſt in them.

27. Fourthly, look on theſe ſufferings of Chriſt to ſtir up this love; and ſurely there cannot be a more effectual means of doing it; for here the love of Chriſt to thee is moſt manifeſt, according to that of the Apoſtle, 1 *John* 3. 16. *Hereby perceive we the love of God towards us, becauſe he laid down his life for us.* And that even the higheſt degree of *love*, for as he himſelf tells us, *John* 15. 13. *Greater love than*

than this hath no man, that a man lay down his life for his friend. Yet even greater love than this had he; for he not only died, but died the most painful and most reproachful death, and that not for his friends, but for his utter enemies. And therefore if after all this love on his part there be no return of love on ours, we are worse than the vilest sort of Men, for even the *Publicans*, Matth. 5. 46. *love those that love them.* Here therefore chide and reproach thy self, that thy love to him is so faint and cool, when His to thee was so zealous and affectionate. And endeavour to enkindle this holy flame in thy Soul, to love him in such a degree, that thou mayest be ready to copy out his example, to part with all things, yea, even life it self whenever he calls for it, that is, whensoever thy obedience to any command of his shall lay thee open to those sufferings: But in the mean time to resolve never again to make any league with his enemies, to entertain or harbour any sin in thy breast. But if there have any such hitherto remained with thee, make this the season to kill and crucifie it; offer it up at this instant a sacrifice to him who was sacrificed for thee, and particularly for that very end that *he might redeem thee from all iniquity.* Therefore here make thy solemn resolutions to forsake every sin, particularly those into which thou hast most frequently fallen. And that thou mayest indeed perform those resolutions, earnestly beg of this crucified Saviour that he will, by the power of his death, mortifie and kill all thy corruptions.

28. When

28. When thou art about to receive the Consecrated Bread and Wine; remember that God now offers to Seal to thee that New Covenant made with Mankind in his Son. For since he gives that his Son in the Sacrament, he gives with him all the benefits of that Covenant, to wit, pardon of sins, Sanctifying grace, and a Title to an eternal inheritance. And here be astonished at the infinite goodness of God, who reaches out to thee so precious a treasure. But then remember that this is all but on condition that thou perform thy part of the Covenant. And therefore settle in thy soul the most serious purpose of obedience, and then with all possible devotion joyn with the Minister in that short, but excellent prayer, used at the instance of giving the Sacrament, *The body of our Lord*, &c. *The benefits of the New Covenant sealed in the Sacrament.*

29. So soon as thou hast Received, offer up thy devoutest Praises for that great mercy, together with thy most earnest prayers for such assistance of Gods Spirit as may enable thee to perform the Vow thou hast now made. Then remembring that Christ is *a propitiation not for our sins only, but also for the sins of the whole world*; let thy charity reach as far as his hath done, and pray for all Mankind that every one may receive the benefit of that Sacrifice of his; commend also to God the estate of the Church, that particularly whereof thou art a Member. And forget not to pray for all to whom thou owest Obedience, both *Upon receiving give thanks.* *Pray.*

both in Church and State; and so go on to pray for such particular persons as either thy Relations or their wants shall present to thee. If there be any Collection for the Poor (as there always ought to be at this time) give freely according to thy ability; or if by the default of others there be no such Collection, yet do thou privately design something towards the relief of thy poor brethren, and be sure to give it, the next fitting opportunity that offers it self. All this thou must contrive to do in the time that others are receiving, that so when the publick prayers after the Administration begin, thou mayest be ready to joyn in them, which thou must likewise take care to do with all devotion: thus much for behaviour At the time of receiving.

After the Sacrament.

30. Now follows the third and last thing, that is, what thou art to do After thy Receiving. That which is immediately to be done, is as soon as thou art retired from the Congregation, to offer up again to God thy Sacrifice of Praise for all those precious mercies conveyed to thee in that holy Sacrament, as also humbly to intreat the continued assistance of his grace to enable thee to make good all those purposes of obedience thou hast now made. And in whatsoever thou knowest thy self most in danger, either in respect of any former habit, or natural inclination, there especially desire and earnestly beg his aid.

Private prayer and thanksgiving.

31. When

31. When thou haſt done this, do not preſently let thy ſelf looſe to thy worldly cares and buſineſs. But ſpend all that day either in meditating, praying, reading, good conferences, or the like; ſo as may beſt keep up that holy flame which is enkindled in thy heart. Afterwards when thy calling requires thee to fall to thy uſual affairs, do it, but yet ſtill remember that thou haſt a greater buſineſs than that upon thy hands; that is, the performing of all thoſe promiſes, thou ſo lately madeſt to God: and therefore whatever thy outward imployments are, let thy heart be ſet on that, keep all the particulars of thy reſolutions in memory, and whenever thou art tempted to any of thy old ſins, then conſider, this is the thing thou ſo ſolemnly vowedſt againſt, and withal remember what a horrible guilt it will be if thou ſhouldſt now wilfully do any thing contrary to that vow; yea, and what a horrible miſchief alſo it will be to thy ſelf. For at thy receiving, God and thou entredſt into Covenant, into a league of friendſhip and kindneſs. And as long as thou keepeſt in that friendſhip with God, thou art ſafe; all the malice of Men or Devils can do thee no harm: for as the Apoſtle ſaith, *Rom* 8. 31. *If God be for us, who can be againſt us?* But if thou breakeſt this league (as thou certainly doeſt, if thou yieldeſt to any

Not preſently to fall to worldly affairs.

To keep thy reſolutions ſtill in memory.

The danger of breaking them.

Making God thy enemy.

any wilful sin) then God and thou art enemies, and if all the World then were for thee, it could not avail thee.

Thy own Conscience.

32. Nay, thou wilt get an enemy within thine own bosom, thy conscience accusing and upbraiding thee; and when God and thine own conscience are thus against thee, thou canst not but be extremely miserable even in this life, besides that fearful expectation of wrath which awaits thee in the next. Remember all this when thou art set upon by any temptation, and then sure thou canst not but look upon that temptation as a cheat that comes to rob thee of thy Peace, thy God, thy very Soul. And then sure it will appear as unfit to entertain it, as thou wouldest think it to harbour one in thy house who thou knowest came to rob thee of what is dearest to thee.

Gods former pardons no encouragement to sin.

33. And let not any experience of God's mercy in pardoning thee heretofore encourage thee again to provoke him; for besides that it is the highest degree of wickedness and unthankfulness to make that *goodness of his which should lead thee to repentance* an encouragement in thy sin: besides this, I say, the oftner thou hast been pardoned, the less reason thou hast to expect it again, because thy sin is so much the greater for having been committed against so much mercy. If a King have several times pardoned an offender, yet if he still return to commission of the same fault, the King will at last be forced if he have any

any love to Juſtice, to give him up to it. Now ſo it is here, God is as well juſt as merciful, and his Juſtice will at laſt ſurely and heavily avenge the abuſe of his Mercy; and there cannot be a greater abuſe of his mercy, than to ſin in hope of it: ſo that it will prove a miſerable deceiving of thy ſelf thus to preſume upon it.

34. Now this care of making good thy Vow muſt not abide with thee ſome few days only, and then be caſt aſide, but it muſt continue with thee all thy days. For if thou break thy Vow, it matters not whether ſooner or later, Nay, perhaps the guilt may in ſome reſpects be more, if it be late, for if thou haſt for a good while gone on in the obſervance of it, that ſhews the thing is poſſible to thee; and ſo thy after-breaches are not of infirmity, becauſe thou canſt not avoid them, but of perverſeneſs, becauſe thou wilt not. Beſides, the uſe of Chriſtian walking muſt needs make it more eaſie to thee. For indeed all the difficulty of it is but from the cuſtom of the contrary: And therefore if after ſome acquaintance with it, when thou haſt overcome ſomewhat of the hardneſs, thou ſhalt then give it over, it will be moſt inexcuſable. Therefore, be careful all the days of thy life to keep ſuch a watch over thy ſelf, and ſo to avoid all occaſions of temptations, as may preſerve thee from all wilful breaches of this vow. *The obligation of this vow perpetual.*

35. But though the obligation of every ſuch ſingle vow reach to the utmoſt day of our lives, yet are we often *Yet often to be renewed.*

often to renew it, that is, we are often to receive the holy Sacrament, for that being the means of conveying to us so great and unvaluable benefits, and it being also a command of Christ, that we should *do this in remembrance of him*, we are in respect both of reason and duty to omit no fit opportunity of partaking of that holy Table. I have now shewed you what that reverence is which we are to pay to God in his Sacrament.

SUNDAY IV.

Honour due to Gods name; sins against it, Blasphemy, Swearing, of Assertory, Promissory, Unlawful Oaths; of Perjury, vain Oaths, and the Sin of them, &c.

Sect. 1. *Honour due to Gods Name.*

THE last thing wherein we are to express our Reverence to him, is the honouring of his Name. Now what this Honouring of his Name is, we shall best understand by considering what are the things by which it is dishonoured, the avoiding of which will be our way of honouring it.

The

The first is, all Blasphemies, or speaking any evil thing of God, the highest degree whereof is cursing him; or if we do not speak it with our mouths, yet if we do it in our hearts by thinking any unworthy thing of him, it is looked on by God, who sees the heart, as the vilest dishonour. *Sins against Blasphemy.*

But there is also a blasphemy of the actions, that is, when Men who profess to be the servants of God, live so wickedly that they bring up an evil report of him whom they own as their Master and Lord. This Blasphemy the Apostle takes notice of, Rom. 2. 24. where he tells those who professe to be observers of the Law, *That by their wicked actions, the Name of God was blasphemed among the Gentiles.* Those Gentiles were moved to think ill of God, as the favourer of sin, when they saw those, who called themselves his servants, commit it.

A second way of Dishonouring Gods Name is by swearing, and that is of two sorts, either by false Oaths, or else by rash and light ones. A false Oath may also be of two kinds, as first, that by which I affirm somewhat, or secondly, that by which I promise. The first is, when I say such or such a thing was done so or so, and confirm this saying of mine with an Oath: if then I know there be not perfect truth in what I say, this is a false perjury, a down-right being forsworn: Nay, if I swear to the truth of that whereof I am only doubtful, though the thing should happen *Swearing. Affirmory Oaths.*

pen

pen to be true, yet it brings upon me the guilt of Perjury; for I swear at a venture, and the thing might for ought I knew be as well false as true; whereas I ought never to swear any thing, the truth of which I do not certainly know.

Promissory.

2. But besides this sort of Oaths, by which I affirm any thing, there is the other sort, that by which I promise somewhat. And that promise may be either to God or Man. When it is to God we call it a Vow, of which I have already spoken under the heads of the Sacraments. I shall now only speak of that to Man, and this may become a false oath, either at, or after the time of taking it. At the time of taking it, it is false, if either I have then no real purpose of making it good, or else take it in a sence different from that which I know he, to whom I make the promise, understands it; for the use of Oaths, being to assure the persons to whom they are made, they must be taken in their sence. But if I were never so sincere at the taking the Oath, if afterwards I do not perform it, I am certainly perjured.

Unlawful Oaths.

3. The nature of an Oath being then thus binding, it nearly concerns us to look that the Matter of our Oaths be lawful, for else we run our selves into a woful snare. For example, suppose I swear to kill a man, if I perform my oath, I am guilty of Murder; if I break it, of Perjury. And so I am under a necessity of sinning one way or other; but there is nothing puts us under a greater degree of this unhappy necessity, than when we swear two Oaths, whereof the one is directly

directly croſs and contradictory to the other. For if I ſwear to give a Man my whole eſtate, and afterwards ſwear to give all or part of that eſtate to another, it is certain I muſt break my oath to one of them, becauſe it is impoſſible to perform it to both, and ſo I muſt be under a neceſſity of being forſworn. And into this unhappy ſtrait every Man brings himſelf that takes any oath which croſſes ſome other which he hath formerly taken; which ſhould make all, that love either God or their own ſouls, reſolve never thus miſerably to entangle themſelves by taking one oath croſs and thwarting to another. But it may perhaps here be asked, what a perſon that hath already brought himſelf into ſuch a condition ſhall do; I anſwer he muſt firſt heartily repent of the great ſin of taking the unlawful oath, and then ſtick only to the lawful, which is all that is in his power towards the repairing his fault, and qualifying him for God's pardon for it.

4. Having ſaid this concerning the kinds of this ſin of Perjury, I ſhall only add a few words to ſhew you how greatly Gods Name is diſhonoured by it. In all oaths you know, God is ſolemnly called to witneſs the truth of that which is ſpoken; now if the thing be falſe, it is the baſeſt affront and diſhonour that can poſſibly be done to God. For it is in reaſon to ſignifie one of theſe two things, either that we believe he knows not whether we ſay true or no; (and that is to make him no God, to ſuppoſe him to be as deceivable, and eaſie to be

God greatly diſhonoured by perjury.

be deluded as one of our ignorant neighbours; or else that he is willing to countenance our Lyes; the former robs him of that great Attribute of his, his knowing all things, and is surely a great dishonouring of him, it being even among Men accounted one of the greatest disgraces, to account a Man fit to have cheats put upon him; yet even so we deal with God, if we venture to forswear upon a hope that God discerns it not. But the other is yet worse, for the supposing him willing to countenance our lies, is the making him a party in them; and is not only the making him no God, (it being impossible that God should either lie himself, or approve it in another) but it is the making him like the very Devil. For he it is that is a liar, and the Father of it, *John* 8. 44. And surely I need not say more to prove that this is the highest degree of dishonouring God's Name.

The punishments of it.

5. But if any yet doubt the hainousness of this sin, let him but consider what God himself says of it in the Third Commandment, where he solemnly professes, *he will not hold him guiltless that taketh his Name in vain*; And sure the adding that to this Commandment, and none of the rest, is the marking this out for a most hainous guilt. And if you look into *Zach.* 5. you will there find the punishment is answerable, even to the utter destruction, not only of the Man, but his House also. Therefore it concerns all Men, as they love either their temporal or eternal welfare, to keep them most strictly from this sin.

But

But besides this of forswearing, I told you there was another sort of Oaths by which God's Name is dishonoured: those are the vain and light Oaths, such as are so usual in our common discourse, and are expressly forbidden by Christ, *Matth.* 5. 34. *But I say unto you, Swear not at all, neither by Heaven, for it is God's throne, nor by the Earth, for it is his footstool:* where you see we are not allowed to swear even by mere creatures, because of the relation they have to God. How great a wickedness is it then to prophane his holy Name by rash and vain Oaths? This is a sin that is (by I know not what charm of Satans) grown into a fashion among us; and now its being so, draws daily more Men into it. But it is to be remembred that when we shall appear before God's Judgment-seat to answer for those profanations of his Name, it will be no excuse to say, it was the fashion to do so: it will rather be an increase of our guilt, that we have by our own practice helped to confirm that wicked custom, which we ought to have beat down and discountenanced. *Vain Oaths.*

6. And sure whatever this prophane Age thinks of it, this is a sin of a very high nature. For besides that it is a direct breach of the Precept of Christ, it shews first, a very mean and low esteem of God: every oath we swear is the appealing to God to judge the truth of what we speak, and therefore being of such greatness and Majesty, requires that the matter concerning which we thus appeal to him should be of great *The sin of them.*

great weight and moment, somewhat wherein either his own glory, or some considerable good of Man is concerned. But when we swear in common discourse, it is far otherwise; and the triflingest or lightest thing serves for the matter of an Oath; nay, often Men swear to such vain and foolish things, as a considering person would be ashamed barely to speak. And is not a great despising of God to call him solemnly to judge in such childish, such wretched matters? God is the great King of the World; now though a King be to be resorted unto in weighty cases, yet sure he would think himself much despised, if he should be called to judge between Boys at their childish games: and God knows many things whereto we frequently swear, are not of greater weight, and therefore are a sign that we do not rightly esteem of God.

They lead to perjury.

7. Secondly, This common swearing is a sin which leads directly to the former of forswearing; for he that by the use of swearing hath made Oaths so familiar to him, will be likely to take the dreadfullest Oath without much consideration. For how shall he that swears hourly, look upon an Oath with any reverence? And he that doth not, it is his chance, not his care that is to be thanked, if he keep from Perjury. Nay, further; he that swears commonly is not only prepared to forswear when a solemn Oath is tendred him, but in all probability does actually forswear himself often in these suddener Oaths; for supposing them to come from a Man ere he is aware (which is

the

the best can be said of them) what assurance can any Man have who swears ere he is aware, that he shall not lie so too: And if he doth both together, he must necessarily be forsworn. But he that observes your common swearers will be put past doubt that they are often forsworn. For they usually swear indifferently to things true or false, doubtful or certain. And I doubt not but if Men who are guilty of this sin would but impartially examine their own practice, their hearts would second me in this observation.

8. Thirdly, This is a sin to which there is no temptation, there is nothing either of pleasure or profit got by it: Most other sins offer us somewhat either of the one or the other, but this is utterly empty of both. So that in this sin the Devil does not play the Merchant for our Souls, as in others he does; he doth not so much as cheapen them, but we give them freely into his hands without any thing in exchange. There seems to be but one thing possible for Men to hope to gain by it, and that is to be believed in what they say, when they thus bind it by an oath. But this also they constantly fail of; for there are none so little believed as the common swearers. And good reason, for he that makes no conscience thus to prophane God's Name, why shall any Man believe he makes any of lying? Nay, their forwardness to confirm every the slightest thing by an oath, rather gives jealousie that they have some inward guilt of falseness, for which that oath must be the cloak. And thus you see in how little stead it stands

No temptation to them.

them, even to this only purpose for which they can pretend it useful: and to any other advantage it makes not the least claim, and therefore is a sin without temptation, and consequently without excuse; for it shews the greatest contempt, nay, unkindness to God, when we will provoke him thus, without any thing to tempt us to it. And therefore though the commonness of this sin hath made it pass but for a small one, yet it is very far from being so either in it self, or in Gods account.

Necessity of abstaining from them.

9. Let all therefore who are not yet fallen into the custom of this sin, be most careful never to yield to the least beginnings of it, and for those who are so miserable, as to be already ensnared in it, let them immediately, as they tender their Souls, get out of it. And let no Man plead the hardness of leaving an old custom, as an excuse for his continuing in it, but rather the longer he hath been in it, so much the more haste let him make out of it, as thinking it too too much, that he hath so long gone on in so great a sin. And if the length of the custom have increased the difficulty of leaving it, that is in all reason to make him set immediately to the casting it off, lest that difficulty at last grow to an impossibility; and the harder he finds it at the present, so much the more diligent and watchful he must be in the use of all those means, which may tend to the overcoming that sinful habit, some few of those means it will not be amiss here to mention.

Means for it.

10 First,

10. First, let him poſſeſs his mind fully of the hainouſneſs of the ſin, and not to meaſure it only according to the common rate of the World. And when he is fully perſwaded of the guilt, then let him add to that, the conſideration of the danger, as that it puts him out of God's favour at the preſent, and will, if he continue in it, caſt him into Hell for ever. And ſure if this were but throughly laid to heart, it would reſtrain this ſin. For I would ask a man, that pretends impoſſibility of leaving the cuſtom, whether if he were ſure he ſhould be hanged the next Oath he ſwore, the fear of it would not keep him from ſwearing? I can ſcarce believe any man in his wits ſo little Maſter of himſelf, but it would. And then ſurely damning is ſo much worſe than hanging, that in all reaſon the fear of that ought to be a much greater reſtraint. The doubt is, men do either not heartily believe that this ſin will damn them, or if they do, they look on it, as a thing a great way off, and ſo are not much moved with it; but both theſe are very unreaſonable. For the firſt, it is certain, that every one that continues wilfully in any ſin is ſo long in a ſtate of damnation, and therefore this being ſo continued in, muſt certainly put a man in that condition. For the ſecond it is very poſſible, he may be deceived in thinking it ſo far off, for how knows any Man that he ſhall not be ſtruck dead with an Oath in his mouth? Or if he were ſure not to be ſo, yet eternal damnation is ſurely to be dreaded above all things, be it at what diſtance ſoever. *Senſe of the guilt and danger.*

Truth in speaking.

11. A ſecond means is to be exactly true in all thou ſpeakeſt; that all men may believe thee on thy bare word, and then thou wilt never have occaſion to confirm it by an oath, to make it more credible, which is the only colour or reaſon can at any time be pretended for ſwearing.

Forſaking the occaſions.

12. Thirdly, Obſerve what it is that moſt betrays thee to this ſin, whether drink, or anger, or the company and example of others, or whatever elſe, and then if ever thou mean to forſake the ſin, forſake thoſe occaſions of it.

Reverence of God.

13. Fourthly, Endeavour to poſſeſs thy heart with a continual Reverence of God, and if that once grow into a cuſtom with thee, it will quickly turn out that contrary one of profaning. Uſe and accuſtom thy ſelf therefore to this reverence of God, and particularly to ſuch a reſpect to his Name, as, if it be poſſible, never to mention it without ſome lifting up of thy heart to him. Even in thy ordinary diſcourſe, whenever thou takeſt his Name into thy mouth, let it be an occaſion of raiſing up thy thoughts to him, but by no means permit thy ſelf to uſe it in idle by-words, or the like. If thou doſt accuſtom thy ſelf to pay this reverence to the bare mention of his Name, it will be an excellent fence againſt the profaning it in oaths.

14. A fifth means is a diligent and constant watch over thy ſelf, that thou thus *offend not with thy tongue*, without which all the former will come to nothing. And the laſt means is Prayer, which muſt be added to all thy endeavours; therefore pray earneſtly, that God will enable thee to overcome this wicked cuſtom; ſay with the *Pſalmiſt*, *Set a watch O Lord, over my mouth, and keep the door of my lips*; and if thou doſt ſincerely ſet thy ſelf to the uſe of means for it, thou mayeſt be aſſured God will not be wanting in his aſſiſtance. I have been the longer on this, becauſe it is ſo reigning a ſin, God in his mercy give all that are guilty of it a true ſight of the hainouſneſs of it.

Watchfulneſs.

Prayer.

15. By theſe ſeveral ways of diſhonouring Gods Name you may underſtand what is the duty of honouring it, *viz.* A ſtrict abſtaining from every one of theſe, and that abſtinence founded on an awful reſpect and reverence to that ſacred Name which is Great, Wonderful and Holy, *Pſal.* 99. 3. I have now paſt through the ſeveral branches of that great Duty of Honouring of God.

What it is to honour God's Name.

SUNDAY V.

Of worship due to Gods Name. Of Prayer and its several parts. Of publick Prayers in the Church, in the Family. Of Private Prayer. Of Repentance, &c. Of Fasting.

Worship.

Sect. 1. THE Eighth Duty we owe to God is WORSHIP; this is that great duty by which especially we acknowledge his Godhead, worship being proper only to God, and therefore it is to be lookt on as a most weighty duty. This is to be performed, first, by our Souls, secondly, by our Bodies: the Souls part is Praying. Now prayer is a speaking to God, and there are divers parts of it, according to the different things about which we speak.

Prayer, its parts.

Confession.

2. As first, there is Confession, that is, the acknowledging our sins to God. And this may be either general or particular; the general is when we only confess in gross, that we are sinful; the particular, when we mention the several sorts and acts of our sins. The former is necessary to be always a part of our solemn prayers, whether publick or

or private. The latter is proper for private prayer, and there the oftner it is uſed the better; yea, even in our daily private prayer it will be fit conſtantly to remember ſome of our greateſt and fouleſt ſins, though never ſo long ſince paſt. For ſuch we ſhould never think ſufficiently confeſſed and bewailed. And this bewailing muſt always go along with Confeſſion; we muſt be heartily ſorry for the ſins we confeſs, and from our ſouls acknowledge our own great unworthineſs in having committed them. For our confeſſion is not intended to inſtruct God, who knows our ſins much better than our ſelves do, but it is to humble our ſelves, and therefore we muſt not think to have confeſt aright till that be done.

3. The ſecond part of prayer is Petition, that is, the begging of God whatſoever we want, either for our Souls or Bodies. For our Souls we muſt firſt beg pardon of ſins, and that for the ſake of Jeſus Chriſt, who ſhed his bloud to obtain it. Then we muſt alſo beg the grace and aſſiſtance of God's Spirit, to enable us to forſake our ſins, and to walk in obedience to him. And herein it will be needful particularly to beg all the ſeveral vertues, as Faith, Love, Zeal, Purity, Repentance, and the like, but eſpecially thoſe which thou moſt wanteſt: and therefore obſerve what thy wants are, and if thou beeſt proud, be moſt inſtant in praying for Humility; if luſtful, for Chaſtity, and ſo for all other Graces, according as thou findeſt thy needs. And in all theſe things that

Petition.

For our Souls.

concern thy Soul, be very earneſt and importunate, take no denial from God, nor give over, though thou do not preſently obtain what thou ſueſt for. But if thou haſt never ſo long prayed for a grace, and yet findeſt it not, do not grow weary of praying, but rather ſearch what the cauſe may be which makes thy prayers ſo ineffectual; ſee if thou do not thy ſelf hinder them; perhaps thou prayeſt to God to enable thee to conquer ſome ſin, and yet never goeſt about to fight againſt it, never makeſt any reſiſtance, but yieldeſt to it as often as it comes, nay, putteſt thy ſelf in its way, in the road of all temptations. If it be thus, no wonder though thy prayers avail not, for thou wilt not let them. Therefore amend this, and ſet to the doing of thy part ſincerely, and then thou needeſt not fear but God will do his.

Bodies. 4. Secondly, we are to petition alſo for our bodies; that is, we are to ask of God ſuch neceſſaries of life as are needful to us, while we live here. But theſe only, in ſuch a degree and meaſure, as his wiſdom ſees beſt for us: we muſt not preſume to be our own carvers, and pray for all that wealth or greatneſs, which our own vain hearts may perhaps deſire, but only for ſuch a condition, in reſpect of outward things, as he ſees may moſt tend to thoſe great ends of our living here, the glorifying him, and the ſaving of our own Souls.

Deprecation. 5. A third part of Prayer is Deprecation, that is, when we pray to God to turn away ſome evil from us.

Now

Now the evil may be either the evil of ſin, or the evil of puniſhment. The evil of Sin is that we are eſpecially to pray againſt, moſt earneſtly begging of God, that he will by the power of his grace, preſerve us from falling into ſin. And whatever ſins they are, to which thou knoweſt thy ſelf moſt inclined, there be particularly earneſt with God to preſerve thee from them. This is to be done daily, but then more eſpecially, when we are under any preſent temptation, and in danger of falling into any ſin: in which caſe we have reaſon to cry out as S. *Peter* did when he found himſelf ſinking, *Save Lord, or I periſh*, humbly beſeeching him either to withdraw the temptation, or ſtrengthen us to withſtand it, neither of which we can do for our ſelves. *Of Sin.*

6. Secondly, We are likewiſe to pray againſt the evil of puniſhment, but principally againſt Spiritual puniſhments, as the anger of God, the withdrawing of his Grace, and Eternal damnation. Againſt theſe we can never pray with too much earneſtneſs. But we may alſo pray againſt temporal puniſhments, that is, any outward affliction, but this with ſubmiſſion to God's will, according to the example of Chriſt, *Matth.* 26. 39. *Not as I will but as thou wilt.* *Of puniſhment.*

7. A fourth part of Prayer is Interceſſion, that is, praying for others. This in general we are to do for all Mankind, as well ſtrangers as acquaintance, but more particularly *Interceſſion.*

those to whom we have any special Relation, either publick, as our Governours both in Church and State, or private, as Parents, Husbands, Wife, Children, Friends, &c. We are also to pray for all that are in affliction, and such particular persons as we discern especially to be so. Yea, we are to pray for those that have done us injury, those *that despitefully use and persecute us*, for it is expresly the command of Christ, *Matth.* 5. 44. and that whereof he hath likewise given us the highest example in praying even for his very crucifiers, *Luke* 23. 34. *Father, forgive them.* For all these sorts of persons we ought to pray, and that for the very same good things we beg of God for our selves, that God would give them in their several places and callings all spiritual and temporal blessings which he sees wanting to them, and turn away from them all evil, whether of sin or punishment.

Thanksgiving.

8. The fifth part of prayer is Thanksgiving; that is, the Praising and Blessing God for all his mercies, whether to our own persons, and those that immediately relate to us, or to the Church and Nation whereof we are Members, or yet more general to all Mankind; and this for all his mercies both spiritual and temporal. In the Spiritual, first, for those wherein we are all in common concerned, as the giving of his Son, the sending of his Spirit, and all those means he hath used to bring sinful Men unto himself. Then secondly, for those mercies we have in our own particulars received, such are the having been born within the pale of the Church, and so

ſo brought up in Chriſtian Religion, by which we have been partakers of thoſe precious advantages of the Word and Sacraments, and ſo have had, without any care or pains of ours, the means of eternal life put into our hands. But beſides theſe, there is none of us but have received other ſpiritual mercies from God.

Spiritual Mercies.

9. As firſt, God's patience and long-ſuffering, waiting for our Repentance, and not cutting us off in our Sins. Secondly, his calls and invitations of us to that repentance, not only outward, in the Miniſtery of the Word, but alſo inward, by the motions of his Spirit. But then if thou be one that hath by the help of God's grace been wrought upon by theſe calls, and brought from a prophane or worldly, to a Chriſtian courſe of life, thou art ſurely in the higheſt degree tyed to magnifie and praiſe his goodneſs, as having received from him the greateſt of mercies.

Temporal.

10. We are likewiſe to give thanks for Temporal bleſſings, whether ſuch as concern the publick, as the proſperity of the Church or Nation, and all remarkable deliverances afforded to either; or elſe ſuch as concern our particular; ſuch are all the good things of this life which we enjoy; as Health, Friends, Food, Rayment, and the like; alſo for thoſe minutely preſervations whereby we are by God's Gracious Providence kept from danger, and the eſpecial deliverances which God hath given us in the time of greateſt perils. It will be impoſſible to ſet down the ſeve-

ral

ral mercies which every Man receives from God, becauſe they differ in kind and degree between one Man and another. But it is ſure that he which receives leaſt, hath yet enough to employ his whole life in praiſes to God. And it will be very fit for every Man to conſider the ſeveral paſſages of his life, and the mercies he hath in each received, and ſo to gather a kind of Liſt or Catalogue of them, at leaſt the principal of them, which he may always have in his memory, and often with a thankful heart repeat before God.

Publick Prayers in the Church.

11. Theſe are the ſeveral parts of Prayer, and all of them to be uſed both publickly and privately. The publick uſe of them is firſt, that in the Church, where all meet to joyn in thoſe prayers wherein they are in common concerned. And in this (where the prayers are ſuch as they ought to be) we ſhould be very conſtant, there being an eſpecial bleſſing promiſed to the joynt requeſts of the faithful; and he that without a neceſſary cauſe abſents himſelf from ſuch publick prayers, cuts himſelf off from the Church, which hath always been thought ſo unhappy a thing, that it is the greateſt puniſhment the Governours of the Church can lay upon the worſt offender; and therefore it is a ſtrange madneſs for Men to inflict it upon themſelves.

In the Family.

12. A ſecond ſort of publick prayer is that in a Family, where all that are Members of it joyn in their common ſupplications; and this

this alſo ought to be very carefully attended to, firſt by the Maſter of the Family, who is to look that there be ſuch prayers, it being as much his part thus to provide for the Souls of his Children and Servants, as to provide food for their Bodies. Therefore there is none even the meaneſt houſholder, but ought to take this care. If either himſelf or any of his Family can read, he may uſe ſome prayers out of ſome good book; if it be the Service Book of the Church, he makes a good choice: if they cannot read, it will then be neceſſary they ſhould be taught without Book ſome form of Prayer which they may uſe in the Family, for which purpoſe again ſome of the Prayers of the Church will be very fit, as being moſt eaſie for their memories by reaſon of their ſhortneſs, and yet containing a great deal of matter. But what choice ſoever they make of prayers, let them be ſure to have ſome, and let no Man that profeſſes himſelf a Chriſtian, keep ſo heatheniſh a family, as not to ſee God be daily worſhipped in it. But when the Maſter of a Family hath done his duty in this providing, it is the duty of every Member of it to make uſe of that proviſion, by being conſtant and diligent at thoſe Family Prayers.

13 Private or ſecret Prayer is that which is uſed by a Man alone apart from all others, wherein we are to be more particular according to our particular needs, than in publick it is fit to be. And this of private prayer is a duty which will not be excuſed by the performance of the other of publick. They are both required, and one muſt *Private Prayer.*

muſt not be taken in exchange for the other. And whoever is diligent in publick prayers, and yet negligent in private, it is much to be feared he rather ſeeks to approve himſelf to Men than to God; contrary to the command of our Saviour, *Matth. 6.* who enjoyns this private prayer, this *praying to our Father in ſecret*, from whom alone we are to expect our reward, and not from the vain praiſes of Men.

Frequency in prayer.

14. Now this duty of Prayer is to be often performed, by none ſeldomer than Evening and Morning, it being moſt neceſſary that we ſhould thus begin and end all our works with God, and that not only in reſpect of the duty we owe him, but alſo in reſpect of our ſelves who can never be either proſperous or ſafe, but by committing our ſelves to him; and therefore ſhould tremble to venture on the perils either of day or night without his ſafeguard. How much oftner this duty is to be performed, muſt be judged according to the buſineſs or leiſure Men have: where, by buſineſs I mean not ſuch buſineſs as Men unprofitably make to themſelves, but the neceſſary buſineſs of a Man's Calling, which with ſome will not afford them much time for ſet and ſolemn Prayer. But even theſe Men may often in a day lift up their hearts to God in ſome ſhort prayers even whilſt they are at their work. As for thoſe that have more leiſure, they are in all reaſon to beſtow more time upon this duty. And let no Man that can find time to beſtow upon his vanities, nay, perhaps his ſins, ſay he wants leiſure for Prayer, but let him now endeavour

endeavour to redeem what he hath miſ-ſpent, by imploying more of that leiſure in this duty for the future: and ſurely if we did but rightly weigh how much it is our own advantage to perform this duty, we ſhould think it wiſdom to be as frequent as we are ordinarily ſeldom in it. *The advantages of Prayer.*

15. For firſt, it is a great Honour for us poor worms of the earth to be allowed to ſpeak ſo freely to the Majeſty of Heaven. If a King ſhould but vouchſafe to let one of his meaneſt Subjects talk familiarly and freely with him, it would be lookt on as a huge honour; that Man how deſpicable ſoever he were before, would then be the envy of all his neighbours; and there is little queſtion he would be willing to take all opportunities of receiving ſo great a grace. But alas! this is nothing to the honour is offered us, who are allowed, nay invited to ſpeak to, and converſe with the King of Kings, and therefore how forward ſhould we in all reaſon be to it? *Honour.*

16. Secondly, it is a great Benefit, even the greateſt that can be imagined; for Prayer is the inſtrument of fetching down all good things to us, whether ſpiritual or temporal, no prayer, that is qualified as it ought to be, but is ſure to bring down a bleſſing, according to that of the Wiſe man, *Eccluſ.* 35. 17. *The prayer of the humble pierceth the clouds, and will not turn away till the higheſt regard it.* You would think him a happy Man that had one certain mean of helping him to whatever he wanted, *Benefits.*

wanted, though it were to coſt him much pains and labour; now this happy Man thou mayeſt be if thou wilt. Prayer is the never-failing means of bringing thee, if not all that thou thinkeſt thou wanteſt, yet all that indeed thou doſt, that is, all that God ſees fit for thee. And therefore be there never ſo much wearineſs to thy fleſh in the duty, yet conſidering in what continual want thou ſtandeſt of ſomething or other from God, it is a madneſs to let that uneaſineſs diſhearten thee, and keep thee from this ſo ſure means of ſupplying thy wants.

Pleaſantneſs.

17. But in the third place, this duty is in it ſelf ſo far from being uneaſie, that it is very pleaſant. God is the fountain of happineſs, *and at his right hand are pleaſures for evermore*, *Pſalm* 16. 11. And therefore the nearer we draw to him, the happier we muſt needs be, the very joys of Heaven ariſing from our nearneſs to God. Now in this life we have no way of drawing ſo near to him as by this of Prayer, and therefore ſurely it is that which in it ſelf is apt to afford abundance of delight and pleaſure; if it ſeem otherwiſe to us, it is from ſome diſtemper of our own hearts, which like a ſick palate cannot reliſh the moſt pleaſant meat. Prayer is a pleaſant duty, but it is withal a ſpiritual one; and therefore if thy heart be carnal; if that be ſet either on the contrary pleaſures of the fleſh, or droſs of the world: no marvel then, if thou taſte no pleaſantneſs in it, if like the *Iſraelites*

Carnality one reaſon of its ſeeming otherwiſe.

lities thou deſpiſe Manna while thou longeſt after the fleſh-pots of *Egypt*. Therefore if thou find a wearineſs in this duty, ſuſpect thy ſelf, purge and refine thy heart from the love of all ſin, and endeavour to put it into a heavenly and ſpiritual frame, and then thou wilt find this no unpleaſant exerciſe, but full of delight and ſatisfaction. In the mean time complain not of the hardneſs of the duty, but of the untowardneſs of thy own heart.

18. But there may alſo be another reaſon of its ſeeming unpleaſant to us, and that is want of uſe. You know there are many things, which ſeem uneaſie at the firſt trial, which yet after we are accuſtomed to them ſeem very delightful, and if this be thy caſe, then thou knoweſt a ready cure, *viz.* to uſe it oftner, and ſo this conſideration naturally inforces the exhortation, of being frequent in this duty. *Want of uſe another.*

19. But we are not only to conſider how often, but how well we perform it. Now to do it well, we are to reſpect, firſt the matter of our Prayers, to look that we ask nothing that is unlawful, as revenge upon our enemies, or the like: ſecondly, the manner; and that muſt be firſt in Faith; we muſt believe, that if we ask as we ought, God will either give us the thing we ask for, or elſe ſomething which he ſees better for us. And then ſecondly in humility, we muſt acknowledge our ſelves utterly unworthy *To ask nothing unlawful.* *To ask in Faith.* *In humility.*

worthy of any of those good things we beg for, and therefore sue for them only for Christs sake; thirdly, with attention, we must mind what we are about, and not suffer our selves to be carried away to the thought of other things I told you at the first, that prayer was the business of the Soul, but if our minds be wandring, it is the work only of the tongue and lips, which make it in Gods account no better than vain babling, and so will never bring a blessing on us. Nay, as *Jacob* said to his Mother, *Gen.* 27. 12. it will be more likely to bring a curse on us than a blessing, for it is a profaning one of the most solemn parts of Gods service, it is a piece of Hypocrisie, the *drawing near to him with our lips, when our hearts are far from him*, and a great slighting and despising that dreadful Majesty we come before; and as to our selves it is a most ridiculous folly, that we who come to God upon such weighty errands, as are all the concernments of our souls and bodies, should in the midst forget our business, and pursue every the lightest thing that either our own vain fancies or the Devil, whose business it is here to hinder us, can offer to us. It is just as if a Malefactor, that comes to sue for his life to the King, should in the midst of his supplication happen to espy a butter-fly, and then should leave his suit, and run a chase after that butter-fly: would you not think it pity, a pardon should be cast away upon so wretchless a creature? And sure it will be as unreasonable to expect that God should attend and grant those suits of ours, which we do not at all consider our selves.

With attention.

20. This

20. This wandring in Prayer is a thing we are much concerned to arm our ſelves againſt, it being that to which we are naturally wonderfull prone. To that end it will be neceſſary firſt to poſſeſs our hearts at our coming to Prayers with the greatneſs of that Majeſty we are to approach, that ſo we may dread to be vain and trifling in his preſence. Secondly, we are to conſider the great concernment of the things we are to ask, ſome whereof are ſuch that if we ſhould not be heard, we were of all creatures the moſt miſerable, and yet this wandring is the way to keep us from being heard. Thirdly, we are to beg God's aid in this particular: And therefore when thou ſetteſt to prayer, let thy firſt petition be for this grace of attention.

Helps againſt wandring.

Conſideration of Gods Majeſty.

Our needs.

Prayer for Gods aid.

21. Laſtly, be as watchful as is poſſible over thy heart in time of prayer to keep out all wandring thoughts, or, if any have gotten in, let them not find entertainment, but as ſoon as ever thou diſcerneſt them, ſuffer them not to abide one moment, but caſt them out with indignation, and beg God's pardon for them. And if thou doſt thus ſincerely, and diligently ſtrive againſt them, either God will enable thee in ſome meaſure to overcome, or he will in his mercy pardon thee what thou canſt not prevent;

Watchfulneſs.

But

But if it be through thy own negligence, thou art to expect neither, ſo long as that negligence continues.

With zeal. 22. In the fourth place, we muſt look our Prayers be with zeal and earneſtneſs; it is not enough that we ſo far attend them as barely to know what it is we ſay; but we muſt put forth all the affection and devotion of our ſouls, and that according to the ſeveral parts of prayer before mentioned. It is not the cold, faint requeſt that will ever obtain from God; we ſee it will not from our ſelves; for if a beggar ſhould ask relief from us, and do it in ſuch a ſcornful manner, that he ſeem'd indifferent whether he had it or no, we ſhould think he had either little want, or great pride; and ſo have no heart to give him. Now ſurely the things we ask from God are ſo much above the rate of an ordinary Alms, that we can never expect they ſhould be given to ſlight and heartleſs petitions. No more in like manner will our Sacrifice of praiſe and thankſgiving ever be accepted by him, if it be not offered from a heart truly affected with the ſenſe of his mercies; it's but a kind of formal complementing which will never be approved by him who requires the heart, and not the lips only. And the like may be ſaid of all the other parts of Prayer. Therefore be careful when thou draweſt nigh to God in Prayer, to raiſe up thy ſoul to the higheſt pitch of zeal and earneſtneſs thou art able. And becauſe of thy ſelf alone thou art not able to do any thing, beſeech God that he will inflame thy heart with this heavenly fire of Devotion, and when

when thou haſt obtained it, beware that thou neither quench it by any wilful ſin, nor let it go out again for want of ſtirring it up and imploying it.

23. Fifthly, We muſt Pray with Purity, I mean, we muſt purge our hearts from all affections to ſin. This is ſurely the meaning of the Apoſtle, 1 *Tim.* 2. 8. when he commands Men to *lift up holy hands in Prayer*, and he there inſtances in one ſpecial ſort of ſin, wrath and doubting; where by doubting is meant thoſe unkind diſputes and contentions which are ſo common amongſt Men. And ſurely he that cheriſhes that or any other ſin in his heart, can never lift up thoſe holy hands which are required in this duty. And then ſure his prayers, be they never ſo many or earneſt, will little avail him. The Pſalmiſt will tell him, he ſhall not be heard, *Pſalm* 66. 18. *If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear me.* Nay, *Solomon* will tell him yet worſe, that his prayers are not only vain, but abominable, *Prov.* 15. 8. *The ſacrifice of the wicked is an abomination to the Lord.* And thus to have our prayers turned into ſin, is one of the heavieſt things that can befal any Man. We ſee it is ſet down in that ſad Catalogue of curſes, *Pſalm* 109. 7. Therefore let us not be ſo cruel to our ſelves as to pull it upon our own heads, which we certainly do if we offer up prayers from an impure heart. *With purity.*

24. In the laſt place we muſt direct our prayers to right ends; and that either in reſpect of the prayer it ſelf, *To right ends.*

ſelf, or the things we pray for; Firſt, we muſt pray not to gain the praiſe of devotion amongſt Men, like thoſe hypocrites, *Matth.* 6. 5. nor yet only for company or faſhion-ſake to do as others do: but we muſt do it, firſt as an act of worſhip to God, ſecondly, as an acknowledgment, that he is that great ſpring, from whence alone we expect all good things; and thirdly, to gain a ſupply of our own or others needs. Then in reſpect of the Things prayed for; we muſt be ſure to have no ill aims upon them; we muſt not ask that we *may conſume it upon our luſts*, *James* 4. 3. as thoſe do who pray for wealth that they may live in riot and exceſs, and for power, that they may be able to miſchief their enemies, and the like. But our end in all muſt be God's glory firſt, and next that, our own and others Salvation; and all other things muſt be taken in only as they tend to thoſe, which they can never do if we abuſe them to ſin. I have now done with that firſt part of worſhip, that of the Soul.

Bodily worſhip.

25. The other is that of the Body, and that is nothing elſe but ſuch humble and reverent geſtures in our approaches to God, as may both expreſs the inward reverence of our Souls, and may alſo pay him ſome tribute from our very Bodies, with which the Apoſtle commands us to glorifie God, as well as with our Souls; and good reaſon, ſince he hath created and redeemed the one as well as the other: whenſoever therefore thou offereſt thy prayers unto God, let it be with all lowlineſs as well of body as of mind,

mind, according to that of the Pſalmiſt, *Pſal.* 95. 6. *O come let us worſhip, let us fall down and kneel before the Lord our Maker.*

26. The Ninth DUTY to God is REPENTANCE: That this is a duty to God we are taught by the Apoſtle, *Acts* 20. 21. where ſpeaking of repentance, he ſtyles it *repentance towards God.* And there is good reaſon this ſhould be a duty to him, ſince there is no ſin we commit but is either mediately or immediately againſt him. For though there be ſins both againſt our ſelves and our neighbours, yet they being forbidden by God, they are alſo breaches of his Commandments, and ſo ſins againſt him. *Repentance.*

This repentance is, in ſhort, nothing but a turning from ſin to God, the caſting off all our former evils, and in ſtead thereof conſtantly practiſing all thoſe Chriſtian duties which God requireth of us. And this is ſo neceſſary a duty, that without it we certainly periſh: we have Chriſt's word for it, *Luke* 13. 5. *Except ye repent, ye ſhall all likewiſe periſh.* *A turning from ſin to God.*

27. The directions for performing the ſeveral parts of this duty have been already given in the preparation to the Lords Supper, and thither I refer the Reader. Only I ſhall here mind him, that it is not to be lookt upon as a duty to be practiſed only at the time of receiving the Sacrament. For this being the only remedy againſt the poiſon of ſin, we muſt renew it as often as we repeat our ſins, that is, daily. I mean *Times for this duty.*

mean we must every day repent of the sins of that day. For what Christ saith of other evils, is true also of this, *Sufficient to the day is the evil thereof*; we have sins enough of each day to exercise a daily repentance, and therefore every Man must thus daily call himself to account.

Daily.

28. But as it is in accounts, they who constantly set down their daily expences, have yet some set time of casting up the whole sum, as at the end of the week or moneth; so should it also be here, we should set aside some time to humble our selves solemnly before God for the sins, not of that day only, but of our whole lives. And the frequenter these times are, the better. For the oftner we thus cast up our accounts with God, and see what vast debts we are run in to him, the more humbly shall we think of our selves, and the more shall thirst after his mercy, which two are the special things that must qualifie us for his pardon. He therefore that can assign himself one day in the week for this purpose, will take a thriving course for his soul. Or if any Man's state of life be so busie as not to afford him to do it so often, let him yet come as near to that frequency as is possible for him, remembring always, that none of his worldly employments can bring him in near so gainful a return as this spiritual one will do, and therefore it is very ill husbandry to pursue them to the neglect of this.

At set times.

29. Besides these constant times there are likewise occasional times for the performance of this duty; such

In the time of affliction.

such especially are the times of calamity and affliction; for when any such befals us, we are to look on it as a message sent from Heaven to call us to this duty, and therefore must never neglect it when we are thus summoned to it, lest we be of the number of them who *despise the chastisements of the Lord*, Heb. 12. 5.

At death.

30. There is yet another time of repentance, which in the practice of Men hath gotten away the custom from all those, and that is the time of death, which it is true, is a time very fit to renew our repentance, but sure not proper to begin it; and it is a most desperate madness for Men to defer it till then. For to say the mildest of it, it is the venturing our Souls upon such miserable uncertainties as no wise Man would trust with any thing of the least value.

The danger of deferring it till then.

For first, I would ask any Man that means to repent at his death, how he knows he shall have an Hours time for it? Do we not daily see Men snatcht away in a moment! And who can tell that it shall not be his own case? But secondly, suppose he have a more leisurely death, that some disease give him warning of its approach, yet perhaps he will not understand that warning, but will still flatter himself, as very often sick People do, with hopes of life to the last: and so his death may be sudden to him, though it comes by never so slow degrees. But again, thirdly, if he do discern his danger, yet how is he sure he shall then be able to repent? Repentance is a grace of

God, not at our command; and it is just and usual with God, when Men have a long time refused and rejected that grace, resisted all his calls and invitations to conversion and amendment, to give them over at last to the hardness of their own hearts, and not to afford them any more of that grace they have so despised. Yet suppose in the fourth place that God in his infinite patience should still continue the offer of that grace to thee, yet thou that hast resisted, it may be thirty, or forty, or fifty years together, how knowest thou that thou shalt put off that habit of resistance upon a sudden, and make use of the grace afforded? It is sure thou hast many more advantages towards the doing it now, than thou wilt have then.

The disadvantages of a death-bed repentance.

31. For first, the longer sin hath kept possession of the heart, the harder it will be to drive it out. It is true, if Repentance were nothing but a present ceasing from the Acts of sin, the death-bed were fittest for it, for then we are disabled from committing most sins; but I have formerly shewed you, repentance contains much more than so, there must be in it a sincere hatred of sin, and love of God. Now how unlikely is it that he which hath all his life loved sin, cherisht it in his bosom, and on the contrary abhorred God and goodness, should in an instant quite change his affections, hate that sin he loved, and love God and goodness, which before he utterly hated?

The Custom of sin.

32. And

32. And secondly, the bodily pains that attend a death-bed will distract thee, and make thee unable to attend the work of repentance, which is a business of such weight and difficulty, as will imploy all our powers even when they are at the freshest. *Bodily pains.*

33. Consider those disadvantages thou must then struggle with, and then tell me what hope there is thou shalt then do that, which now upon much easier terms thou wilt not. But in the third place there is a danger behind beyond all these, and that is, that the repentance which Death drives a Man to, will not be a true repentance; for in such a case it is plain, it is only the fear of Hell puts him on it, which though it may be a good beginning, where there is time after to perfect it, yet where it goes alone it can never avail for Salvation. Now that Death-bed repentances are often only of this sort, is too likely, when it is observed, that many Men who have seemed to repent when they have thought Death approaching, have yet, after it hath pleased God to restore them to health, been as wicked (perhaps worse) as ever they were before; which shews plainly that there was no real change in them, and then surely had such a Man died in that seeming repentance, God, *who tries the heart*, would not have accepted it, which he saw was unsincere. When all these dangers are laid together, it will surely appear a most desperate adventure for any Man to trust to a Death-bed repentance. *Danger of unsincerity.*

Nor is it ever the leſs for that example of the penitent Thief, *Luke* 23. 43. which is by many ſo much depended on. For it is ſure his caſe and ours differ widely; he had never heard of Chriſt before, and ſo more could not be expected of him than to embrace him as ſoon as he was tendred to him: But we have had him offered, nay preſt upon us from our Cradles, and yet have rejected him. But if there were not this difference, it is but a faint hope can be raiſed only from a ſingle example, and another we find not in the whole Bible. The *Iſraelites* we read were *fed with Manna from Heaven*, but would you not think him ſtark mad that ſhould out of expectation of the like, neglect to provide himſelf any food? Yet it is full as reaſonable to depend upon this example as the other. I conclude all in the words of the Wiſe man, *Eccleſ.* 12. 1. *Remember thy Creator in the days of thy youth, before the evil days come.*

Faſting.

34. To this duty of repentance, Faſting is very proper to be annexed. The Scripture uſually joyns them together; among the *Jews* the great day of attonement was to be kept with faſting, as you may ſee by comparing *Levit.* 16. 31. with *Iſa.* 58. 5. And this by Gods eſpecial appointment. And in the Prophets when the People are called on to repent and humble themſelves, they are alſo called on to Faſt. Thus it is, *Joel* 2. 12. *Therefore now thus ſaith the Lord, Turn ye unto me with all your hearts, with faſting, and with weeping*, &c. Yea, ſo proper hath faſting been accounted to Humiliation, that we ſee even wicked

ed *Ahab* would not omit it in his, 2 *Kings* 21.27. nor the Heathen *Ninevites* in theirs, *Jonah* 3.5. Nor is it leſs fit or leſs acceptable ſince Chriſt, than it was before him. For we ſee he ſuppoſes it as a duty ſometimes to be performed, when he gives directions to avoid vain-glory in it, *Mat.* 6.6. And alſo aſſures us that if it be performed as it ought, not to pleaſe men but God, it will ſurely be rewarded by him. And accordingly we find it practiſed by the Saints. *Anna, Luke* 2.37. *ſerved God with faſting and prayer:* where it is obſervable, that it is reckoned as a ſervice of God, fit to be joyned with Prayers. And the Chriſtians of the firſt times were generally very frequent in the practice of it. Now though faſting be eſpecially proper to a time of humiliation, yet is it not ſo reſtrained to it, but it may be ſeaſonable, whenſoever we have any extraordinary thing to requeſt from God. Thus when *Eſther* was to endeavour the deliverance of her people from deſtruction, ſhe and all the *Jews* kept a ſolemn Faſt, *Eſth.* 4.16. And thus when *Paul* and *Barnabas* were to be Ordained Apoſtles, there was faſting joyned to prayer, *Acts* 13.3. And ſo it will be very fit for us whenſoever we have need of any extraordinary directions, or aſſiſtance from God, whether concerning our temporal or ſpiritual concernments, thus to quicken our prayers by Faſting. But above all occaſions, This of Humiliation ſeems moſt to require it, for beſides the advantages of kindling our zeal, which is never more neceſſary than when we beg for pardon of ſins, Faſting carries in it ſomewhat of revenge, which is reckoned

as a special part of repentance, 2 *Cor.* 7. 11. For by denying our bodies the refreshment of our ordinary food, we do inflict somewhat of punishment upon our selves for our former excesses, or whatever other sins we at that time accuse our selves of; which is a proper effect of that indignation which every sinner ought to have against himself. And truly he that is so tender of himself that he can never find in his heart so much as to miss a meal, by way of punishment for his faults, shews he is not much fallen out with himself, for committing them; and so wants that indignation which the Apostle in the forenamed Texts mentions as a part of true repentance.

Fasting a revenge upon our selves.

35. There is no doubt, but such holy revenges upon our selves for sins are very acceptable to God; yet we must not think that either those, or any thing else we can do, can make satisfaction for our offences, for that nothing but the bloud of Christ can do. And therefore on that, and not on any of our performances we must depend for pardon. Yet since that bloud shall never be applied to any but penitent sinners, we are as much concern'd to bring forth all the fruits of repentance, as if our hopes depended on them only.

Such revenges acceptable with God.

Yet no satisfaction for sins.

36. How often this duty of fasting is to be performed, we have no direction in Scripture. That must be allotted

Times of fasting.

allotted by Mens own piety, according as their health, or other considerations will allow. But as it is in humiliation, the frequenter returns we have of set times for it, the better; so it is likewise in fasting, the oftner, the better, so it be not hurtful either to our healths, or to some other duty required of us. Nay perhaps fasting may help some Men to more of those times for humiliation, than they would otherwise gain. For perhaps there are some, who cannot, without a manifest hindrance to their calling, allow a whole day to that work, yet such a one may at least afford that time he would otherwise spend in eating: And so fasting will be doubly useful towards such a mans humiliation, both by helping him in the duty, and gaining him time for it.

37. I have now gone through the first branch of our Duty to God, to wit, the acknowledging him for our God. The second is, the having no other. Of which I need say little, as it is a forbidding of that grosser sort of Heathenish Idolatry, the worshipping of Idols, which though it were once common in the world, yet is now so rare, that it is not likely any that shall read this will be concerned in it. Only I must say, That to pay Divine worship to any creature, be it Saint or Angel, yea, or the Image of Christ himself, is a transgression against this second branch of our duty to God, it being the imparting that to a creature which is due only to God, and therefore is strictly to be abstained from.

Second branch of our duty to God.

Inward Idolatry.

38. But there is another sort of Idolaty of which we are generally guilty, and that is, when we pay those affections of Love, Fear, Trust, and the like to any creature in a higher degree than we do to God: for that is the setting up that thing, whatsoever it is, for our God. And this inward kind of Idolatry is that which provokes God to jealousie, as well as the outward of worshipping an Idol. I might enlarge much upon this, but because some severals of it have been toucht on in the former discourse, I suppose it needless, and therefore shall now proceed to the second head of DUTY, that to our *SELVES*.

SUNDAY VI.

Duty to our Selves; of Sobriety; of Humility; the great Sin of Pride; of Vain Glory, the Danger, Folly; the Means to prevent it: of Meekness, &c.

Duty to our Selves.

Sect 1. THis DUTY to our SELVES is by S. *Paul* in the forementioned Text, *Titus* 2. 12. summed up in this one word Soberly. Now by Soberly is meant our keeping within those due bounds which God hath set us. My business

ſineſs will therefore be to tell you what are the particulars of this ſobriety: and that firſt, in reſpect of the ſoul, ſecondly in reſpect of the body. The ſobriety of the ſoul ſtands in right governing its paſſions and affections; and to that are many Vertues required, I ſhall give you the particulars of them.

2. The firſt of them is Humility, which may well have the prime Place, not only in reſpect of the excellency of the vertue, but alſo of its uſefulneſs towards the obtaining of all the reſt: This being the foundation on which all others muſt be built. And he that hopes to gain them without this, will prove but like that fooliſh builder Chriſt ſpeaks of, *Luke* 6. 49. *Who built his houſe on the ſand.* Of the humility towards God I have already ſpoken, and ſhewed the neceſſity of it, I am now to ſpeak of Humility, as it concerns our ſelves, which will be found no leſs neceſſary than the former. *Humility.*

3. This Humility is of two ſorts, the firſt is, the having a mean and low opinion of our ſelves, the ſecond is the being content that others ſhould have ſo of us. The firſt of theſe is contrary to pride, the other to vain-glory. And that both theſe are abſolutely neceſſary to Chriſtians, I am now to ſhew you; which will I conceive, beſt be done by laying before you firſt, the ſin; ſecondly, the danger; thirdly, the contrary vices.

4. And firſt, for Pride; the ſin of it is ſo great, that it caſt the Angels out of Heaven, and there- *The great ſin of Pride.*

fore if we may judge of ſin by the puniſhment, it was not only the firſt, but the greateſt ſin that ever the Devil himſelf hath been guilty of: But we need no better proof of the hainouſneſs of it, than the extreme hatefulneſs of it to God; which beſides that inſtance of his puniſhing the Devil, we may frequently find in the Scriptures, *Prov.* 16. 5. *Every one that is proud in heart is an abomination to the Lord.* And again, Chap. 6. 16. where there is mention of ſeveral things the Lord hates, a proud look is ſet as the firſt of them: ſo *Jam.* 4. 7. *God reſiſteth the proud*; and divers other Texts there are to the ſame purpoſe, which ſhews the great hatred God bears to this ſin of Pride. Now ſince it is certain, God who is all goodneſs hates nothing, but as it is evil, it muſt needs follow, that where God hates in ſo great a degree, there muſt be a great degree of evil.

The Danger. Drawing into other ſins,

5. But ſecondly, PRIDE is not only very ſinful, but very dangerous; and that firſt, in reſpect of drawing us to other ſins; ſecondly, of betraying us to puniſhments. First, pride draws us to other ſins, wherein it ſhews it ſelf indeed to be the direct contrary to humility; for as that is the root of all Vertue, ſo is this of all Vice. For he that is proud ſets himſelf up as his own God, and ſo can never ſubmit himſelf to any other Rules or Laws than what he makes to himſelf. The ungodly, ſays the Pſalmiſt, *is ſo proud that he careth not for God, Pſal.* 10. 4. Where you ſee, it is his pride that makes him deſpiſe God. And when

when a man is once come to that, he is prepared for the commiſſion of all ſins. I might inſtance in a multitude of particular ſins that naturally flow from this of pride; as firſt Anger, which the Wiſe man ſets as the effect of Pride, *Prov.* 21. 24. calling it proud wrath; ſecondly, ſtrife and contention; which he again notes to be the off-ſpring of Pride, *Prov.* 30. 10. *Only by pride cometh contention.* And both theſe are indeed moſt natural effects of pride: For he that thinks very highly of himſelf, expects much ſubmiſſion and obſervance from others, and therefore cannot but rage and quarrel whenever he thinks it not ſufficiently paid. It would be infinite to mention all the fruits of this bitter root: I ſhall name but one more, and that is, that pride not only betrays us to many ſins, but alſo makes them incurable in us, for it hinders the working of all remedies.

Fruſtrating of remedies.

6. Thoſe remedies muſt either come from God or man; if from God, they muſt be either in the way of meekneſs and gentleneſs, or elſe of ſharpneſs and puniſhment. Now if God by his goodneſs eſſay to lead a proud man to repentance, he quite miſtakes God's meaning, and thinks all the mercies he receives are but the reward of his own deſert, and ſo long 'tis ſure he will never think he needs repentance. But if on the other ſide God uſe him more ſharply and lay afflictions and puniſhments upon him, thoſe in a proud heart work nothing but murmurings and hating of God, as if he did him injury in thoſe puniſhments. As for the remedies that can

be

be uſed by Man, they again muſt be either by way of correction or exhortation. Corrections from Man will ſure never work more on a proud heart, than thoſe from God, for he that can think God unjuſt in them, will much rather believe it of Man. And exhortations will do as little. For let a proud Man be admoniſhed though never ſo mildly and lovingly, he looks on it as a diſgrace. And therefore inſtead of confeſſing or amending the fault, he falls to reproaching his reprover as an overbuſie or cenſorious perſon, and for that greateſt and moſt precious act of kindneſs, looks on him as his enemy. And now one that thus ſtubbornly reſiſts all means of cure, muſt be concluded in a moſt dangerous eſtate.

Betraying to puniſhment.

7. But beſides this danger of ſin, I told you there was another, that of puniſhment, and of this there will need little proof, when it is conſidered, that God is the proud mans profeſt enemy, that he hates and reſiſts him, as appeared in the Texts forecited: And then there can be little doubt, that he which hath ſo mighty an adverſary ſhall be ſure to ſmart for it. Yet beſides this general ground of concluſion, it may not be amiſs to mention ſome of thoſe Texts which particularly threaten this ſin, as *Prov.* 16. 18. *Pride goeth before deſtruction, and an haughty ſpirit before a fall:* Again, *Prov.* 16. 5. *Every one that is proud in heart is an abomination to the Lord; though hand joyn in hand, yet they ſhall not be unpuniſhed.* The decree it ſeems is unalterable, and whatever endeavours are uſed to preſerve the

the proud man, they are but vain, for he *ſhall not go unpuniſhed*. And this is very remarkable in the ſtory of *Nebuchadnezzar*, *Dan.* 4. who though a King, the greateſt in the World, yet for his pride was driven from among Men to dwell and feed with beaſts. And it is moſt frequently ſeen, that this ſin meets with very extraordinary judgments even in this life. But if it ſhould not, let not the proud Man think that he hath eſcaped God's vengeance, for it is ſure there will be a moſt ſad reckoning in the next; for if God ſpared not the Angels for this ſin, but caſt them into Hell, let no Man hope to ſpeed better.

8. In the third place I am to ſhew you the great Folly of this ſin; and to do that, it will be neceſſary to conſider the ſeveral things whereof Men uſe to be proud; they are of three ſorts, either thoſe which we call the goods of Nature, or the goods of Fortune, or the goods of Grace. *The folly.*

9. By the Goods of Nature, I mean Beauty, Strength, Wit, and the like, and the being proud of any of theſe is a huge folly. For firſt, we are very apt to miſtake and think our ſelves handſom or witty when we are not, and then there cannot be a more Ridiculous Folly than to be proud of what we have not, and ſuch every one eſteems it in another man, though he never ſuppoſes it his own caſe; and ſo never diſcerns it in himſelf. And therefore there is nothing more deſpicable amongſt all men, than a proud fool; yet no Man that entertains high opinions of his own wit but is in danger *In reſpect of the goods of Nature.*

danger to be thus deceived, a mans own judgment of himſelf being of all others the leaſt to be truſted. But ſecondly, ſuppoſe we be not out in judging, yet what is there in any of theſe natural endowments which is worth the being proud, there being ſcarce any of them which ſome creature or other hath not in a greater degree than man? How much does the whiteneſs of the Lilly, and the redneſs of the Roſe exceed the white and red of the faireſt face? What a multitude of creatures is there, that far ſurpaſs man in ſtrength and ſwiftneſs? And divers others there are, which as far as concerns any uſeful end of theirs, act much more wiſely than moſt of us; and are therefore oftentimes in Scripture propoſed to us by way of Example. It is therefore ſurely great unreaſonableneſs for us to think highly of our ſelves for ſuch things as are common to us with beaſts and plants. But thirdly, if they were as excellent as we fancy them, yet they are not at all durable, they are impaired and loſt by ſundry means; a phrenzy will deſtroy the rareſt wit; a ſickneſs decay the freſheſt beauty, the greateſt ſtrength, or however old age will be ſure to do all. And therefore to be proud of them is again a folly in this reſpect. But laſtly, whatever they are, we gave them not to our ſelves. No man can think he did any thing towards the procuring his natural beauty or wit, and ſo can with no reaſon value himſelf for them.

The goods of fortune.

10. In the ſecond place, the folly is as great to be proud of the goods of Fortune; by them I mean

mean wealth and honour, and the like; for it is ſure they add nothing of true worth to the man; ſomewhat of outward pomp and bravery they may help him to, but that makes no change in the perſon. You may load an Aſs with money, or deck him with rich Trappings, yet ſtill you will not make him a whit the nobler kind of beaſt by either of them. Then ſecondly, theſe are things we have no hold of, they vaniſh many times ere we are aware; he that is rich to day, may be poor to morrow, and then will be the leſs pitied by all in his poverty, the prouder he was when he was rich. Thirdly, we have them all, but as Stewards, to lay out for our Maſters uſe, and therefore ſhould rather think how to make our accounts, than pride our ſelves in our receipts. Laſtly, whatever of theſe we have, they as well as the former, are not owing to our ſelves. But if they be lawfully gotten, we owe them only to God, whoſe bleſſing it is, that maketh rich, *Prov.* 10. 22. If unlawfully, we have them upon ſuch terms that we have very little reaſon to brag of them. And thus you ſee in theſe ſeveral reſpects, the folly of this ſecond ſort of pride.

11. The third is that of the goods of Grace; that is, any vertue a man hath. And here I cannot ſay, but the things are very valuable, they being infinitely more precious than all the world, yet nevertheleſs this is of all the reſt the higheſt folly. And that not only in the foregoing reſpect, that we help not our ſelves to it, grace being above all things moſt immediately God's

The goods of Grace.

God's work in us, but especially in this, that the being proud of grace is the sure way to lose it. God, who gives grace to the humble, will take it from the proud. For if, as we see in the parable, *Matth.* 25. 28. the talent was taken from him who had only put it to no use at all, how shall he hope to have it continued to him that hath put it to so ill, that instead of trading with it for God, hath trafficked with it for Satan? And as he will lose the grace for the future, so he will lose all the Reward of it for the time past. For let a Man have done never so many good acts, yet if he be proud of them; that pride shall be charged on him to his destruction, but the good shall never be remembred to his reward. And this proves it to be a most wretched folly to be proud of grace. It is like that of children that pull those things in pieces they are most fond of, but yet much worse than that of theirs, for we not only lose the thing (and that the most precious that can be imagined) but we must also be eternally punished for doing so, there being nothing that shall be so sadly reckoned for in the next World as the abuse of Grace: and certainly there can be no greater abuse of it than to make it serve for an end so directly contrary to that for which it was given, it being given to make us humble, not proud, to magnifie God, not our selves.

Means of Humility.

12. Having shewed you thus much of this sin, I suppose it will appear very necessary to be eschewed; to which purpose it will first be useful to consider what hath been already said

ſaid concerning it, and that ſo ſeriouſly as may work in thee not ſome ſlight diſlike, but a deep and irreconcileable hatred of the ſin: ſecondly, to be very watchful over thine own heart, that it cheriſh not any beginnings of it; never ſuffer it to feed on the fancy of thine own worth; but when ever any ſuch thought ariſes beat it down immediately with the remembrance of ſome of thy follies or ſins, and ſo make this very motion of pride an occaſion of humility. Thirdly, never to compare thy ſelf with thoſe thou thinkeſt more fooliſh or wicked than thy ſelf, that ſo thou mayeſt like the *Phariſee*, *Luke* 16. 11. extol thy ſelf for being better; but if thou wilt compare do it with the Wiſe and Godly; and then thou wilt find thou comeſt ſo far ſhort as may help to pull down thy high eſteem of thy ſelf. Laſtly, To be very earneſt in Prayer, that God would root out all degrees of this ſin in thee, and make thee one of thoſe *poor in Spirit*, *Matth.* 5. 3. to whom the bleſſing even of Heaven it ſelf, is promiſed.

13. The ſecond contrary to humility I told you was vain-glory. That is, a great thirſt after the praiſe of men. And firſt, that this is a ſin, I need prove no otherwiſe, than by the words of our Saviour, *John* 5. 44. *How can ye believe, that receive honour one of another?* Where it appears, that it is not only a ſin, but ſuch an one, as hinders the receiving of Chriſt into the heart, for ſo believing there ſignifies. This then in the ſecond place ſhews you likewiſe the great dangerouſneſs of this

Vain-glory.

The ſin.

this ſin, for if it be that which keeps Chriſt out of the heart, it is ſure it brings infinite danger, ſince all our ſafety, all our hope of eſcaping the wrath to come, ſtands in receiving him. But beſides the authority of this Text, common experience ſhews, that whereever this ſin hath poſſeſſion, it indangers men to fall into any other. For he that ſo conſiders the praiſe of men, that he muſt at no hand part with it, when ever the greateſt ſins come to be in faſhion and credit (as God knows many are now adays) he will be ſure to commit them rather than run the diſgrace of being too ſingle and preciſe. I doubt there are many conſciences can witneſs the truth of this, ſo that I need ſay no more to prove the danger of this ſin.

The danger.

14. The third thing I am to ſhew is the folly of it; and that will appear firſt, by conſidering what it is we thus hunt after, nothing but a little Air, a blaſt, the breath of Men, it brings us in nothing of real advantage; for I am made never the wiſer nor the better for a mans ſaying I am wiſe and good. Beſides, if I am commended, it muſt be either before my face or behind my back: if the former, it is very often flattery, and ſo the greateſt abuſe that can be offered, and then I muſt be very much a fool to be pleaſed with it. But if it be behind my back, I have not then ſo much as the pleaſure of knowing it; and therefore it is a ſtrange folly thus to purſue what is ſo utterly gainleſs. But ſecondly, it is not only gainleſs, but painful and uneaſie alſo. He that

The folly.

eagerly

eagerly ſeeks praiſe, is not at all maſter of himſelf, but muſt ſuit all his actions to that end, and inſtead of doing what his own reaſon and conſcience (nay perhaps his worldly conveniency) directs him to, he muſt take care to do what will bring him in commendations, and ſo enſlave himſelf to every one that hath but a tongue to commend him. Nay, there is yet a further uneaſineſs in it, and that is, when ſuch a man fails of his aim, when he miſſes the praiſe, and perhaps meets with the contrary reproach, (which is no mans lot more often than the vain-glorious, nothing making a man more deſpiſed) then what diſturbances and diſquiets, and even tortures of mind is he under? A lively inſtance of this you have in *Achitophel*, 2 *Sam.* 17. 23. who had ſo much of this, upon *Abſaloms* deſpiſing his counſel, that he choſe to rid himſelf of it, by hanging himſelf. And ſure this painfulneſs that thus attends this ſin, is ſufficient proof of the folly of it. Yet this is not all, it is yet further very hurtful. For if this vain glory be concerning any good or Chriſtian Action, it deſtroys all the fruit of it; he that prays or gives alms to be ſeen of men, *Matth.* 6. 2. muſt take that as his reward, *Verily, I ſay unto you, they have their reward*; they muſt expect none from God, but the portion of thoſe Hypocrites, that *love the praiſe of men more than the praiſe of God.* And this is a miſerable folly to make ſuch an exchange. It is like the Dog in the Fable, who ſeeing in the water the ſhadow of that meat he held in his mouth, catcht at the ſhadow, and ſo let go his meat. Such dogs, ſuch unreaſonable creatures

are

are we, when we thus let go the eternal rewards of Heaven to catch at a few good words of Men. And yet we do not only loſe thoſe eternal joys, but procure to our ſelves the contrary eternal miſeries, which is ſure the higheſt pitch of folly and madneſs. But if the vain-glory be not concerning any vertuous action, but only ſome indifferent thing, yet even there alſo it is very hurtful, for vain-glory is a ſin that whereſoever it is placed, endangers our eternal eſtate, which is the greateſt of all miſchiefs. And even for the preſent 'tis obſervable, that of all other ſins it ſtands the moſt in its own light, hinders it ſelf of that very thing it purſues. For there are very few that thus hunt after praiſe, but they are diſcerned to do ſo, and that is ſure to eclipſe what ever praiſe-worthy thing they do, and brings ſcorn upon them inſtead of reputation. And then certainly we may juſtly condemn this ſin of folly which is ſo ill a manager even of its own deſign.

Helps againſt vain-glory.

15. You have ſeen how wretched a thing this vain-glory is in theſe ſeveral reſpects, the ſerious conſideration whereof may be one good means to ſubdue it, to which it will be neceſſary to add, firſt, a great watchfulneſs over thy ſelf; obſerve narrowly whether in any Chriſtian duty thou at all conſidereſt the praiſe of Men, or even in the moſt indifferent action, look whether thou have not too eager a deſire of it, and if thou findeſt thy ſelf inclined that way, have a very ſtrict eye upon it, and where ever thou findeſt it ſtirring, check and reſiſt

reſiſt it, ſuffer it not to be the end of thy actions: But in all matters of Religion let thy Duty be the Motive; in all indifferent things of common life let Reaſon direct thee; and though thou mayeſt ſo far conſider in thoſe things the opinion of Men, as to obſerve the rules of common decency, yet never think any praiſe that comes in to thee from any thing of that kind worth the contriving for. Secondly, ſet up to thy ſelf another aim, *viz.* that of pleaſing God: let that be thy inquiry when thou goeſt about any thing; whether it be approved by him. And then thou wilt not be at leiſure to conſider what praiſe it will bring thee from Men. And ſurely he that weighs of how much more moment it is to pleaſe God, who is able eternally to reward us, than man, whoſe applauſe can never do us any good, will ſurely think it reaſonable to make the former his only care. Thirdly, if at any time thou art praiſed, do not be much overjoyed with it, nor think a jot the better of thy ſelf; but if it be Vertue thou art praiſed for, remember it was God that wrought it in thee, and give him the glory, never thinking any part of it belongs to thee: If it be ſome indifferent action; then remember that it cannot deſerve praiſe, as having no goodneſs in it: But if it be a bad one, (as amongſt Men ſuch are ſometimes likelieſt to be commended) then it ought to ſet thee a trembling inſtead of rejoycing, for then that woe of our Saviour belongs to thee, *Luke* 6.26. *Wo unto you when men ſpeak well of you, for ſo did their Fathers to the falſe Prophets*; and there is not a greater ſign of a hard-

ned

ned heart, than when Men can make their ſins the matter of their glory. In the laſt place let thy prayers aſſiſt in the fight with this corruption.

Meekneſs.

16. A ſecond VERTUE is MEEKNES, that is, a calmneſs and quietneſs of ſpirit, contrary to the Rages and Impatiencies of Anger. This Vertue may be exerciſed, either in reſpect of God, or his neighbour. That towards God I have already ſpoken of, under the head of Humility, and that towards our neighbour, I ſhall hereafter. All I have here to ſay of it is, how it becomes a duty to our ſelves; that it does, in reſpect of the great advantage we reap by it; which in mere kindneſs to our ſelves, we are to look after. And to prove that it brings us this great advantage, I need ſay no more, but that this meekneſs is that to which Chriſt hath pronounced a bleſſing, *Matth.* 5. 5. *Bleſſed are the meek*, and not only in the next world, but even in this too, *they ſhall inherit the earth.* Indeed none but the meek perſon hath the true enjoyment of any thing in the world, for the angry and impatient are like ſick people, who, we uſe to ſay, cannot enjoy the greateſt proſperities: For let things be never ſo fair without. they will raiſe ſtorms within their own breaſts. And ſurely whoever hath either in himſelf, or others obſerved the great uneaſineſs of this paſſion of anger, cannot chuſe but think meekneſs a moſt pleaſant thing.

Advantages of it.

17. Beſides, it is alſo a moſt honourable thing,

thing, for it is that whereby we reſemble Chriſt, *Learn of me*, ſaith he, *for I am meek and lowly in heart*, *Matth.* 11. 28. It is alſo that whereby we conquer our ſelves, overcome our own unruly paſſions, which of all victories is the greateſt and moſt noble. Laſtly, it is that which makes us behave our ſelves like Men, whereas anger gives us the fierceneſs and wildneſs of Savage beaſts. And accordingly the one is by all eſteemed and loved, whereas the other is hated and abhorred, every man ſhunning a man in rage as they would a furious beaſt.

18. Farther yet, meekneſs is the ſobriety of the mind, whereas anger is the direct madneſs; it puts a Man wholly out of his own power, and makes him do ſuch things as himſelf in his ſober temper abhors; how many Men have done thoſe things in their rage, which they have repented all their lives after? And therefore ſurely as much as a Man is more honourable than a beaſt, a ſober man than a mad-man; ſo much hath this vertue of Meekneſs the advantage of honour above the contrary vice of Anger.

19. Again, meekneſs makes any condition tolerable and eaſie to be endured. He that meekly bears any ſuffering, takes off the edge of it that it cannot wound him; whereas he that frets and rages at it, whets it and makes it much ſharper than it would be; nay, in ſome caſes makes that ſo, which would not elſe be ſo at all. As particularly in the caſe of reproachful words, which in themſelves can do us no harm, they neither hurt our bodies nor leſſen our eſtates, the only miſchief they can do us is to make us angry,

angry, and then our anger may do us many more; whereas he that meekly paſſes them by, is never the worſe for them, nay the better; for he ſhall be rewarded by God for that patience. Much more might be ſaid to recommend this vertue to us, in reſpect of our own preſent advantage, but I ſuppoſe this may ſuffice to perſwade Men to eſteem of it. The harder matter will be to gain them to the practice of it, wherein Men pretend I know not what difficulties of natural conſtitutions, and the like; yet ſure there is no Man of ſo Cholerick a temper, but if he did heartily ſet about it, would find it were not impoſſible in ſome good meaſure to ſubdue it: but then he muſt be diligent in uſing means to that end. Divers of theſe means there are, I ſhall mention ſome few.

Means of obtaining it.

20. As firſt, The imprinting deep in our minds the lovelineſs and benefits of meekneſs, together with the uglineſs and miſchiefs of anger.

Secondly, to ſet before us the example of Chriſt, who endured all reproaches, yea, torments with perfect patience, that was *led as a ſheep to the ſlaughter*, Iſaiah 53. 7. *That when he was reviled, reviled not again, when he ſuffered, threatned not*; 1 *Pet.* 2. 23. And if he, the Lord of glory, ſuffered thus meekly and unjuſtly from his own creatures, with what face can we ever complain of any injury done to us?

Thirdly, To be very watchful to prevent the very firſt beginnings of anger, and to that purpoſe to mortifie all inward peeviſhneſs and frowardneſs of mind, which is a ſin in it ſelf, though it proceed

proceed no further, but will also be sure, if it be cherished, to break out into open effects of anger. Therefore whenever thou findest the least arising of it within thee, make as much haste to check it as thou wouldest to quench a fire in thy house; but be sure thou bring no fuel to it, by entertaining any thoughts that may increase it. And at such time especially keep a most strict watch over thy tongue, that it break not out into any angry speeches, for that breath will fan the fire, not only in thine adversary, but thy self too; therefore though thy heart be hot within, stifle the flame, and let it not break out; and the greater the temptation is, the more earnestly lift up thy heart to God to assist thee to overcome it. Fourthly, often remember how great punishments thy sins have deserved, and then, whether thy sufferings be from God or man, thou wilt acknowledge them to be far short of what is due to thee, and therefore wilt be ashamed to be impatient at them.

11. The third Vertue is CONSIDERATION, and this in a most special manner we owe to our Souls. For without it we shall, as rash unadvised people use to do, rush them into infinite perils. Now this Consideration is either of our State, or of our Actions. By our State, I mean what our condition is to God-ward, whether it be such that we may reasonably conclude our selves in his favour. This it much concerns us to consider and examine, and that not by those easie rules Men are apt to frame to themselves,

Consideration.

Of our State.

as whether they believe that Chriſt died for their ſins; that they are of the number of the elect, and ſhall certainly be ſaved: if theſe and the like were all that were required to put us into God's favour, none but ſome melancholy perſon could ever be out of it; for we are apt enough generally to believe comfortably of our ſelves. But the Rules God hath given us in his Word are thoſe by which we muſt be tried at the laſt day, and therefore are certainly the only ſafe ones by which to try our ſelves now. And the ſumm of thoſe are, that whoſoever continues in any one wilful ſin, is not in his favour, nor can, if he do ſo die, hope for any mercy at his hand.

The Rule by which to try our State.

22. Now it is highly neceſſary we ſhould conſider what our condition is in this reſpect: for ſince our life is nothing but a puff of breath in our noſtrils, which may, for ought we know, be taken from us the next minute, it nearly concerns us to know how we are provided for another World, that ſo in caſe we want at preſent that Oyl in our Lamps wherewith we are to meet the Bridegroom, *Matth.* 25. 8. we may timely get it, and not for want of it be ever ſhut out like the fooliſh Virgins from his preſence. The neglect of this conſideration hath undone many ſouls, ſome by too eaſie a belief that they were in a good condition, without conſidering and trying themſelves by the foregoing Rule, but preſuming either upon ſome ſlight outward performances, or upon ſuch a

The danger of inconſideration.

falſe

falſe faith as I even now deſcribed; others by the wretched careleſs going on, without ſo much as asking themſelves what their condition is, but hope they ſhould do as well as their neighbours, and ſo never enquiring farther; which wretched careleſneſs will as certainly undo the ſpiritual, as the like would do the temporal eſtate: yet in that every Man is wiſe enough to foreſee, that a Man that never takes any accounts of his eſtate to ſee whether he be worth ſomething or nothing, will be ſure to be a beggar in the end. But in this far weightier matter we can generally be thus improvident.

23. The ſecond thing we are to conſider, is our Actions, and thoſe either before or after the doing of them. In the firſt place, we are to conſider before we act, and not to do any thing raſhly or headily; but firſt, to adviſe with our conſciences, whether this be lawful to be done, for he that follows his own inclination, and does every thing which that moves him to, ſhall be ſure to fall into a multitude of ſins. Therefore conſider ſoberly, and be aſſured of the lawfulneſs of the thing before thou venture to do it. This adviſedneſs is in all worldly things accounted ſo neceſſary a part of wiſdom, that no Man is accounted wiſe without it; a raſh Man we look upon as the next degree to a fool. And yet it is ſure, there is not ſo much need of looking about us in any thing as in what concerns our ſouls, and that not only in reſpect of the great value of them above all things elſe, but alſo in regard of

Our actions.

Before we do them.

the great danger they are in, as hath been ſhew more at large in the beginning of the Treatiſe.

After they are done.

24. Secondly, We are to consider the actions when they are paſt alſo, that is, we are to examine whether they have been ſuch as are allowable by the Laws of Chriſt. This is very neceſſary, whether they be good or bad; if they be good, the recalling them helpeth us to the comfort of a good conſcience, and that comfort again encourageth us to go on in the like; and beſides, it ſtirs us up to thankfulneſs to God, by whoſe grace alone we were enabled to do them. But if they be bad, then it is eſpecially neceſſary that we thus examine them, for without this it is impoſſible we ſhould ever come to amendment; for unleſs we obſerve them to have been amiſs, we can never think it needful to amend, but ſhall ſtill run on from one wickedneſs to another, which is the greateſt curſe any Man can lye under.

Frequency of conſideration.

25. The oftner therefore we uſe this Conſideration, the better, for the leſs likely it is that any of our ſins ſhall eſcape our knowledge. It is much to be wiſht that every Man ſhould thus every night try the actions of the day, that ſo, if he have done any thing amiſs, he may ſoon check himſelf for it, and ſettle his reſolutions againſt it, and not let it grow on to a habit and courſe. And that he may alſo early beg God's pardon, which will the eaſier be had the ſooner it is asked, every delay of that being a great increaſe of the ſin. And ſurely whoever

means

means to take an account of himſelf at all, will find this the eaſier courſe; it being much eaſier to do it ſo a little at a time, and while paſſages are freſh in his memory, than to take the account of a long time together. Now if it be conſidered, that every wilful ſin muſt have a particular repentance before it can be pardoned, me-thinks Men ſhould tremble to ſleep without that repentance; for what aſſurance hath any Man that lies down in his Bed, that he ſhall ever riſe again? And then how dangerous is the condition of that Man that ſleeps in an unrepented ſin? The weighing of theſe ſeveral Motives may be a means, by God's bleſſing, to bring us to the practice of this duty of Conſideration in all the parts of it.

Danger of omitting it.

SUNDAY VII.

Of Contentedneſs and the Contraries to it; Murmuring, Ambition, Covetouſneſs, Envy; Helps to Contentedneſs; of duties which concern our Bodies; of Chaſtity, &c. Helps to it; of Temperance.

Sect. 1. *Contentedneſs.* THE Fourth VERTUE is CONTENTEDNES, and this ſurely is a duty we muſt owe to our ſelves, it being that without which it is impoſſible to be happy. This Contentedneſs is a well-pleaſedneſs with that condition, whatever it is, that God hath placed us in, not murmuring and repining at our lot, but chearfully welcoming whatſoever God ſends. How great, and withal how pleaſant a vertue this is, may appear by the contrariety it hath to ſeveral great and painful vices; ſo that where this is rooted in the heart, it ſubdues not only ſome ſuch ſingle ſin, but a cluſter of them together.

Contrary to murmuring. 2. And firſt it is contrary to all murmuring in general, which is a ſin moſt hateful to God, as may appear by his ſharp puniſhments of it

it on the *Iſraelites* in the Wilderneſs, as you may read in ſeveral places of the Book of *Exodus*, and *Numbers*. And ſurely it is alſo very painful and uneaſie to a Mans ſelf; for if, as the Pſalmiſt ſaith, it be a *joyful and pleaſant thing to be thankful*, we may by the Rule of contraries conclude, it is a ſad and unpleaſant thing to be murmuring, and, I doubt not, every Mans own experience will confirm the truth of it.

To ambition.

3. Secondly, It is contrary to Ambition: the Ambitious Man is always diſliking his preſent condition, and that makes him ſo greedily to ſeek a higher, whereas he that is content with his own, lies quite out of the road of this temptation. Now Ambition is not only a great ſin in it ſelf, but it puts Men upon many other: There is nothing ſo horrid, which a Man that eagerly ſeeks greatneſs will ſtick at; lying, perjury, murder, or any thing will down with him, if they ſeem to tend to his advancement; And the uneaſineſs of it is anſwerable to the ſin. This none can doubt of, that conſiders what a multitude of fears and jealouſies, cares and diſtractions there are that attend ambition in its progreſs, beſides the great and publick ruines that uſually be'al it in the end. And therefore ſure Contentedneſs is in this reſpect as well a Happineſs as a Vertue.

To Covetouſneſs.

4. Thirdly, It is contrary to Covetouſneſs; this the Apoſtle witneſſeth, *Heb.* 13. 5. *Let your converſation be without covetouſneſs, and be content with ſuch things as ye have*; where you ſee contentedneſs is ſet as the direct contrary to covetouſneſs,

vetouſneſs. But of this there needs no other proof than common experience: for we ſee the covetous Man never thinks he hath enough, and therefore can never be content; for no Man can be ſaid to be ſo that thirſts after any thing he hath not. Now that you may ſee how excellent and neceſſary a vertue this is that ſecures us againſt covetouſneſs, it will not be amiſs a little to conſider the nature of that ſin.

Covetouſneſs contrary to our duty to God.

5. That it is a very great crime, is moſt certain, for it is contrary to the very foundation of all good life; I mean thoſe three great Duties, to God, to our Selves, to our Neighbours. Firſt, It is ſo contrary to our Duty to God, that Chriſt himſelf tells us, *Luke* 16. 13. *We cannot ſerve God and Mammon:* he that ſets his heart upon Wealth, muſt neceſſarily take it off from God. And this we daily ſee in the covetous Man's practice, he is ſo eager in the gaining of riches, that he hath no time or care to perform duty to God; let but a good bargain, or opportunity of gain come in his way, Prayer and all duties of Religion muſt be neglected to attend it. Nay, when the committing the greateſt ſin againſt God may be likely either to get or ſave him ought, his love of wealth quickly perſwades him to commit it.

To our Selves.

6. Secondly, It is contrary to the Duty we owe to our Selves, and that both in reſpect of our Souls and Bodies. The covetous Man deſpiſes his Soul, ſells that to eternal deſtruction for a little

pelf:

pelf: for ſo every Man does that by any unlawful means ſeeks to enrich himſelf; nay, though he do it not by unlawful means, yet if he have once ſet his heart upon wealth, he is that covetous perſon upon whom the Apoſtle hath pronounced, *That he ſhall not enter into the Kingdom of God*, 1 *Cor.* 6. 10. Nor doth he only offend againſt his Soul but his Body too. For he often denies that thoſe neceſſary refreſhments it wants, and for which his wealth (as far as it concerns himſelf) was given him. This is ſo conſtantly the cuſtom of rich Miſers, that I need not prove it to you.

17. In the third place, Covetouſneſs is contrary to the duty we owe to our Neighbours. *To our neighbours.* And that in both the parts of it, Juſtice and Charity: he that loves money immoderately, will not care whom he cheats and defrauds, ſo he may bring in gain to himſelf: and from hence ſpring thoſe many tricks of deceit and couzenage ſo common in the World. As for Charity, that is never to be hoped for from a covetous Man, who dreads the leſſening of his own heaps more than the ſtarving of his poor brother. You ſee how great a ſin this is, that we may well ſay of it as the Apoſtle doth, 1 *Tim.* 6. 10. *The love of money is the root of all evil.* And it is not much leſs uneaſie than wicked, for between the care of getting and the fear of loſing, the covetous Man enjoys no quiet hour. Therefore every Man is deeply concerned, as he tenders his happineſs either in this World or the next, to guard himſelf againſt this ſin, which he

can no way do, but by poſſeſſing his heart with this vertue of contentedneſs.

Contentedneſs contrary to envy.

8. In the fourth place, it is contrary to envy, for he that is content with his own condition hath no temptation to envy anothers: How unchriſtian a ſin this of envy is, ſhall hereafter be ſhewed; At the preſent, I need ſay no more, but that it is alſo a very uneaſie one, it frets and gnaws the very heart of him that harbours it. But the worſe this ſin is, the more excellent ſtill is this grace of contentedneſs, which frees us from it. I ſuppoſe I have ſaid enough to make you think this a very lovely and deſirable Vertue. And ſure it were not impoſſible to be gained by any, that would but obſerve theſe few directions.

Helps to contentedneſs.

9. Firſt, To conſider that whatever our eſtate and condition in any reſpect be, it is that which is allotted us by God, and therefore is certainly the beſt for us, he being much better able to judge for us than we for our ſelves; and therefore to be diſpleaſed at it, is in effect to ſay, we are wiſer than he. Secondly, conſider throughly the vanity of all worldly things, how very little there is in them, while we have them; and how uncertain we are to keep them; but above all, in how little ſtead they will ſtand us at the day of Death or Judgment, and then thou canſt not think any of them much worth the deſiring, and ſo wilt not be diſcontented for want of them. Thirdly, Suffer not thy fancy to run on things thou haſt not;

many

many have put themſelves out of love with what they have, only by thinking what they want. He that ſees his neighbour poſſeſs ſomewhat, which himſelf hath not, is apt to think how happy he ſhould be, if he were in that Man's condition, and in the mean time never thinks of enjoying his own, which yet perhaps in many reſpects may be much happier, than that of his neighbours which he ſo much admires. For we look but upon the outſide of other Mens conditions, and many a Man that is envied by his neighbours, as a wonderful happy perſon, hath yet ſome ſecret trouble, which makes him think much otherwiſe of himſelf. Therefore never compare thy condition in any thing with thoſe thou counteſt more proſperous than thy ſelf, but rather do it with thoſe thou knoweſt more unhappy, and then thou wilt find cauſe to rejoyce in thine own portion. Fourthly, Conſider how far thou art from deſerving any good thing from God; and then thou canſt not but with *Jacob*, *Gen.* 32 10. confeſs that thou art *not worthy of the leaſt of thoſe mercies* thou enjoyeſt, and inſtead of murmuring that they are no more, wilt ſee reaſon to admire, and praiſe the bounty of God, that they are ſo many. Fifthly, be often thinking of the joys laid up for thee in Heaven: look upon that as thy home, on this World only as an Inn, where thou art fain to take up in thy paſſage; and then as a Traveller expects not the ſame conveniences at an Inn, that he hath at home; ſo thou haſt reaſon to be content with whatever entertainment thou findeſt here, knowing thou art upon thy journey to a place

of

of infinite happineſs, which will make an abundant amends for all the uneaſineſs, and hardſhip thou canſt ſuffer in the way. Laſtly, Pray to God, from whom all good things do come, that he will to all his other bleſſings, add this of a contented mind, without which thou canſt have no taſte or reliſh of any other.

Diligence.

10. A fifth Duty is DILIGENCE: this is made up of two parts, watchfulneſs, and induſtry, and both theſe we owe to our Souls.

Watchfulneſs againſt ſin.

11. Firſt, Watchfulneſs, in obſerving all the dangers that threaten them. Now ſince nothing can endanger our Souls, but ſin, this watchfulneſs is principally to be imployed againſt that: And as in a Beſieged City, where there is any weak part, there it is neceſſary to keep the ſtrongeſt guard; ſo it is here, where ever thou findeſt thy inclinations ſuch, as are moſt likely to betray thee to ſin, there it concerns thee to be eſpecially watchful: Obſerve therefore carefully to what ſins either thy natural temper, thy company, or thy courſe of life do particularly incline thee, and watch thy ſelf very narrowly in thoſe; yet do not ſo lay out all thy care on thoſe, as to leave thy ſelf open to any other, for that may give Satan as much advantage on the other ſide; but let thy watch be general, againſt all ſin, though in a ſpecial manner againſt thoſe, which are like oftneſt to aſſault thee.

12. The ſecond part of diligence, is induſtry or labour, and this alſo we owe to our Souls, for without it they will as little proſper as the Vineyard of the ſluggard; which *Solomon* deſcribes, *Prov.* 24. 30. *Induſtry in improving gifts.*

For there is a husbandry of the Soul, as well as of the eſtate, and the end of the one, as of the other, is the encreaſing and improving of its riches. Now the riches of the Soul are either Natural or Divine. By the Natural I mean its faculties or reaſon, wit, memory, and the like; by the Divine I mean the graces of God, which are not the Souls Natural portion, but are given immediately by God; and both theſe we are to take care to improve, they being both talents intruſted to us for that purpoſe.

13. The way of improving the Natural is by imploying them ſo, as may bring in moſt honour to God: we muſt not let them lie idle by us through ſloth, neither muſt we overwhelm them with intemperance and brutiſh pleaſures, which is the caſe of too many, but we muſt imploy them, and ſet them on work. But then we muſt be ſure it be not in the Devils ſervice; like many, who ſet their wit only to the profaning of God, or cheating their neighbours, and ſtuff their memories with ſuch filthineſs, as ſhould never once enter their thoughts; our uſe of them muſt be ſuch, as may bring in moſt glory to God, moſt benefit to our neighbours, and may beſt fit us to make our accounts, when God ſhall come to reckon with us for them. *Of Nature.*

14 But

Of Grace.

14. But the other part of the Souls riches, is yet more precious, that is, Grace, and of this we muſt be eſpecially careful, to husband and improve it. This is a duty expreſly commanded us by the Apoſtle, 2 *Pet.* 3. 18. *Grow in Grace.* And again in the firſt Chapter of that Epiſtle, Verſe 5. *Give all diligence to add to your Faith vertue, and to vertue knowledge,* &c. Now the eſpecial means of improving grace is by imploying it; that is, by doing thoſe things for the enabling of us, whereunto it was given us. This is a ſure means, not only in reſpect of that eaſineſs, which a cuſtom of any thing brings in the doing of it, but principally, as it hath the promiſe of God, who hath promiſed, *Matth.* 25. 29. That *to him that hath* (that is, hath made uſe of what he hath) *ſhall be given, and he ſhall have abundance.* He that diligently and faithfully imploys the firſt beginnings of Grace, ſhall yet have more, and he that in like manner husbands that more, ſhall yet have a greater degree; ſo that what *Solomon* ſaith of temporal riches, is alſo true of ſpiritual, *The hand of the diligent maketh rich.*

To improve good motions.

15. Therefore when ever thou findeſt any good motions in thy heart, remember that is a ſeaſon for this ſpiritual husbandry: If thou haſt but a check of conſcience againſt any ſin thou liveſt in, drive that on till it come to a hatred; and then that hatred, till it come to reſolution; then from that reſolution, proceed to ſome endeavours againſt it.

Do

Do this faithfully, and ſincerely, and thou ſhalt certainly find the grace of God aſſiſting thee, not only in every of theſe ſteps, but alſo enabling thee to advance ſtill higher, till thou come to ſome Victory over it. Yet to this induſtry thou muſt not fail to add thy prayers alſo, there being a promiſe that God will *give the holy ſpirit to them that ask it*, *Matth.* 7. 11. And therefore they that aſk it not, have no reaſon to expect it. But it muſt be asked with ſuch an earneſtneſs, as is ſome way anſwerable to the value of the thing, which being infinitely more precious than all the World, both in reſpect of its own worth, and its uſefulneſs to us, we muſt beg it with much more zeal and earneſtneſs, than all temporal bleſſings, or elſe we ſhew our ſelves deſpiſers of it.

The danger of the contrary.

16. Having directed you to the means of improving grace, I ſhall to quicken you to it, mention the great danger of the contrary; and that is not as in other things, the loſing only thoſe further degrees, which our induſtry might have helped us to, but it is the loſing even of what we already have; *For from him that hath not* (that is again, hath not made uſe of what he hath) *ſhall be taken away even that which he hath*, *Matth.* 25. 29. God will withdraw the grace, which he ſees ſo neglected, as we ſee in that parable; the Talent was taken from him that had only hid it in a Napkin, and had brought in no gain to his Lord. And this is a moſt ſad puniſhment, the greateſt that can befal any Man, before he comes to Hell, indeed it is

ſome

ſome kind of foretaſte of it, it is the delivering him up to the power of the Devil, and it is the baniſhing him from the face of God, which are not the leaſt parts of the miſery of the damned. And it is alſo the binding a Man over to that fuller portion of wretchedneſs in another World, for that is the laſt doom of the unprofitable ſervant, *Matth.* 25.30. *Caſt ye the unprofitable ſervant into outer darkneſs, there ſhall be weeping and gnaſhing of teeth.* You ſee there are no light dangers that attend this neglect of grace, and therefore if we have any love, nay, any common pity to our Souls, we muſt ſet our ſelves to this induſtry. I have now done with thoſe VERTUES which reſpect our SOULS, I come now to thoſe which concern our BODIES.

Chaſtity.

17. The firſt of which is CHASTITY or PURITY, which may well be ſet in the front of the duties we owe to our bodies, ſince the Apoſtle, 1 *Cor.* 6. 18. ſets the contrary as the eſpecial ſin againſt them. *He that committeth fornication, ſinneth againſt his own* body.

18 Now this vertue of Chaſtity conſiſts in a perfect abſtaining from all kinds of uncleanneſs, not only that of adultery, and fornication, but all other more unnatural ſorts of it committed either upon our ſelves, or with any other. In a word all acts of that kind are utterly againſt Chaſtity, ſave only in lawful marriage. And even there Men are not to think themſelves let looſe to pleaſe their brutiſh appetites, but are to keep themſelves within ſuch rules of moderation, as agree to the ends of marriage, which being

being theſe two, the begetting of Children, and the avoiding of fornication, nothing muſt be done which may hinder the firſt of theſe ends; and the ſecond aiming only at the ſubduing of luſt, the keeping Men from any ſinful effects of it, is very contrary to that end to make marriage an occaſion of heightning and enflaming it.

19. But this vertue of Chaſtity reacheth not only to the reſtraining of the groſſer act, but to all lower degrees; it ſets a guard upon our eyes, according to that of our Saviour, *Matth.* 5. 28. *He that looketh on a woman to luſt after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart*; and upon our hand, as appears by what Chriſt adds in that place, *If thy hand offend thee, cut it off*; ſo alſo upon our tongues, that they ſpeak no immodeſt or filthy words, *Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, Epheſ.* 4. 29. Nay upon our very thoughts and fancies, we muſt not entertain any foul or filthy deſires, not ſo much as the imagination of any ſuch thing. Therefore he that forbears the groſſer act, and yet allows himſelf in any of theſe, it is to be ſuſpected that it is rather ſome outward reſtraint that keeps him from it, than the conſcience of the ſin. For if it were that, it would keep him from theſe too, theſe being ſins alſo, and very great ones in God's ſight. Beſides he that lets himſelf looſe to theſe, puts himſelf in very great danger of the other, it being much more eaſie to abſtain from all, than to ſecure againſt the one, when the other

Uncleanneſs forbidden in the very loweſt degrees.

other is allowed. But above all, it is to be considered that even these lower degrees are such as make Men very odious in God's eyes, who seeth the heart, and loves none that are not pure there.

The mischiefs of it.

20. The loveliness of this Vertue of Chastity needs no other way of describing, than by considering the loathsomness and mischiefs of the contrary sin, which is first, very brutish; those desires are but the same that the beasts have, and then how far are they sunk below the nature of Men, that can boast of their sins of that kind, as of their special excellency? When, if that be the measure, a Goat is the more excellent creature. But indeed they that eagerly pursue this part of Bestiality, do often leave themselves little, besides their humane shape, to difference them from beasts: This sin so clouds the understanding, and defaceth the reasonable Soul. Therefore *Solomon* very well describes the young Man that was going to the Harlots house, *Prov 7. 22. He goeth after her as an Oxe goeth to the slaughter.*

To the Soul.

To the Body.

21. Nor secondly are the effects of it better to the body than to the mind. The many foul and filthy, besides painful diseases, which often follow this sin, are sufficient witnesses how mischievous it is to the body. And alas, how many are there that have thus made themselves the Devils Martyrs? suffered such torments in the pursuit of this sin, as would exceed the invention of the greatest

greateſt tyrant? Surely they that pay thus dear for damnation, very well deſerve to enjoy the purchaſe.

The judgements of God againſt it.

22. But thirdly, Beſides the natural fruits of this ſin, it is attended with very great and heavy Judgments from God; the moſt extraordinary and miraculous Judgment that ever befel any place, Fire and Brimſtone from Heaven upon *Sodom* and *Gomorrha*, was for this ſin of uncleanneſs: And many examples likewiſe of God's vengeance may be obſerved upon particular perſons, for this ſin. The inceſt of *Amnon* coſt him his life, as you may read, 2 *Sam.* 13. *Zimri* and *Cozbi* were ſlain in the very act, *Numb.* 25. 8. And no perſon that commits the like, hath any aſſurance it ſhall not be his own caſe. For how ſecretly ſoever it be committed, it cannot be hid from God, who is the ſure avenger of all ſuch wickedneſs. Nay, God hath very particularly threatned this ſin, 1 *Cor.* 3. 17. *If any man defile the Temple of God, him ſhall God deſtroy.* This ſin of uncleanneſs is a kind of ſacriledge, a polluting thoſe bodies, which God hath choſen for his Temples, and therefore no wonder, if it be thus heavily puniſhed.

It ſhuts out from Heaven.

23. Laſtly, This ſin ſhuts us out from the Kingdom of Heaven, wherein no impure thing can enter. And we never find any liſt of thoſe ſins, which bar Men thence, but this of uncleanneſs hath a ſpecial place in it: Thus it is, *Gal.* 5. 19. and ſo again, 1 *Cor.* 6. 9.

If

If we will thus pollute our ſelves, we are fit company only for thoſe black ſpirits, the Devil and his Angels, and therefore with them we muſt expect our portion, where our flames of luſt ſhall end in flames of fire.

Helps to Chaſtity.

24. All this laid together, may ſurely recommend the vertue of Chaſtity to us, for the preſerving of which we muſt be very careful, firſt, to check the beginnings of the temptation, to caſt away the very firſt fancy of luſt with indignation; for if you once fall to parley and talk with it, it gains ſtill more upon you, and then it will be harder to reſiſt; Therefore your way in this temptation is to fly rather than fight with it. This is very neceſſary, not only that we may avoid the danger of proceeding to act the ſin, but alſo in reſpect of the preſent fault of entertaining ſuch fancies, which of it ſelf, though it ſhould never proceed further is, as hath been ſhewed, a great abomination before God. Secondly, have a ſpecial care to fly idleneſs, which is the proper ſoil for theſe filthy weeds to grow in, and keep thy ſelf always buſied in ſome innocent or vertuous imployment; for then theſe fancies will be leſs apt to offer themſelves. Thirdly, never ſuffer thy ſelf to recal any unclean paſſages of thy former life with delight, for that is to act over the ſin again, and will be ſo reckoned by God, nay, perhaps thus deliberately to think of it may be a greater guilt than a raſh acting of it. For this both ſhews thy heart to be ſet upon filthineſs, and is alſo a preparation to more acts of it. Fourthly, for-

forbear the company of ſuch light and wanton perſons, as either by the filthineſs of their diſcourſe, or any other means, may be a ſnare to thee. Fifthly, pray earneſtly, that God would give thee the Spirit of Purity, eſpecially at the time of any preſent temptation. Bring the unclean Devil to Chriſt to be caſt out, as did the Man in the Goſpel; and if it will not be caſt out with Prayer alone, add Faſting to it; but be ſure thou do not keep up the flame by any high or immoderate feeding. The laſt remedy, when the former prove vain, is Marriage, which becomes a duty to him that cannot live innocently without it. But even here there muſt be care taken, leſt this which ſhould be for his good, become not to him an occaſion of falling for want of ſobriety in the uſe of Marriage. But this I have toucht on already, and therefore need add no more but an earneſt intreaty, that Men would conſider ſeriouſly of the foulneſs and danger of this ſin of uncleanneſs, and not let the commonneſs of it leſſen their hatred of it, but rather make them abhor that ſhameleſs impudence of the World, that can make light of this ſin againſt which God hath pronounced ſuch heavy curſes, *Whoremongers and Adulterers God will judge*, Heb. 13. 4. and ſo he will certainly do all ſorts of unclean perſons whatſoever.

25. The ſecond VERTUE that concerns our bodies is TEMPERANCE: And the exerciſes of that are divers, as firſt, Temperance in Eating; ſecondly, in Drinking; thirdly, in Sleep; fourthly, in Recreation; fifthly, in Apparel. I ſhall ſpeak *Temperance.*

In Eating. ſpeak of them ſeverally; and firſt, of temperance in Eating. This temperance is obſerved when our eating *Ends of eating.* is agreeable to thoſe ends to which eating is by God and Nature deſigned; thoſe are firſt, the Being; ſecondly, the Well-being of our bodies.

Preſerving of life. 26. Man is of ſuch a frame that Eating becomes neceſſary to him for the preſerving his life; hunger being a natural diſeaſe which will prove deadly if not prevented, and the only phyſick for it is eating, which is therefore become a neceſſary means of keeping us alive. And that is the firſt end of eating, and as Men uſe not to take Phyſick for pleaſure, but remedy, ſo neither ſhould they eat.

Of Health. 27. But ſecondly, God hath been ſo bountiful as to provide not only for the Being, but the Well-being of our bodies, and therefore we are not tied to ſuch ſtrictneſs, that we may eat no more than will juſt keep us from ſtarving, but we may alſo eat whatſoever either for kind or quantity moſt tends to the health and welfare of them: Now that eating which is agreeable to theſe ends, is within the bounds of temperance, as on the contrary whatſoever is contrary to them, is a tranſgreſſion againſt it; he therefore that ſets up to himſelf other ends of eating, as either the pleaſing of his taſte, or (what is yet worſe) the pampering of his body, that he may the better ſerve his luſt, he directly thwarts and croſſes theſe ends of God; for he that hath

thoſe

those aims doth that which is very contrary to health, yea, to life it self, as appears by the many diseases and untimely deaths which surfeiting and uncleanness daily bring on Men.

28. He therefore that will practise this Vertue of Temperance, must neither eat so much, nor of any such sorts of meat, (provided he can have other) as may be hurtful to his health: what the sorts or quantities should be, is impossible to set down, for that differs according to the several constitutions of Men, some Men may with temperance eat a great deal, because their stomachs require it; when another may be guilty of intemperance in eating but half so much, because it is more than is useful to him. And so also for the sort of Meat, it may be niceness and luxury for some to be curious in them, when yet some degree of it may be necessary to the infirmities of a weak stomach, which not out of wantonness but disease cannot eat the courser meats. But I think it may in general be said, that to healthful bodies the plainest meats are generally the most wholsom, but every Man must in this be left to judge for himself; and that he may do it aright, he must be careful that he never suffer himself to be enslaved to his palate, for that will be sure to satisfie it self, whatever becomes of health or life. *Rules of Temperance in Eating.*

29. To secure him the better, let him consider, First, how unreasonable a thing it is that the whole body should be subject to this one Sense of Tasting, *Means of it.*

ing that it must run all hazards only to please that. But it is yet much more so, that the diviner part, the Soul, should also be thus enslaved; and yet thus it is in an intemperate person, his very soul must be sacrificed to this brutish appetite; for the sin of intemperance, though it be acted by the Body, yet the Soul must share in the eternal punishment of it. Secondly, Consider how extreme short and vanishing this pleasure is, it is gone in a moment, but the pains that attend the excess of it are much more durable, and then surely it agrees not with that common reason, wherewith, as Men, we are indued, to set our hearts upon it. But then in the third place, it agrees yet worse with the temper of a Christian, who should have his heart so purified and refined with the expectation of those higher and spiritual joys he looks for in another World, that he should very much despise these gross and brutish pleasures, which beasts are as capable of as we, and to them we may well be contented to leave them, it being the highest their natures can reach to; but for us who have so much more excellent hopes, it is an intolerable shame that we should account them as any part of our happiness. Lastly, the sin of Gluttony is so great and dangerous, that Christ thought fit to give an especial warning against it. *Take heed to your selves that your hearts be not over-charged with surfeiting*, &c. *Luke* 21. 34. And you know what was the end of the rich glutton, *Luke* 16. He that had *fared deliciously every day*, at last wants a *drop of water to cool his tongue*. So much for the first sort of Temperance, that of Eating.

SUN-

SUNDAY VIII.

Of Temperance in drinking, False Ends of drinking, viz. *Good-fellowship, putting away cares,* &c.

Sect. 1. THE second is Temperance in Drinking; and the ends of eating and drinking being much the same, I can give no other direct rules in this, than what were given in the former, to wit, that we drink neither of such sorts of liquor, nor in such quantities as may not agree with the right ends of drinking, the preserving our lives and healths: only in this there will be need of putting in one Caution; for our understandings being in more danger to be hurt by drinking than meat, we must rather take care to keep that safe, and rather not drink what we might safely in respect of our health, if it be in danger to distemper our reason. This I say, because it is possible some Mens brains may be so weak that their heads cannot bear that ordinary quantity of drink which would do their bodies no harm. And whoever is of this temper must strictly abstain from that degree of drink, or that sort of it which he finds hath that effect, yea, though it

Temperance in drinking.

do in other respects appear not only safe but useful to his health. For though we are to preserve our healths, yet we are not to do it by a sin, as drunkenness most certainly is.

False ends of drinking.

2. But alas! of those multitudes of drunkards we have in the World, this is the case but of very few, most of them going far beyond what their health requires, yea, or can bear, even to the utter destruction thereof. And therefore it is plain, Men have set up to themselves some other ends of drinking than those allowable ones forementioned; it may not be amiss a little to explain what they are, and withal to shew the unreasonableness of them.

Good-fellowship.

3. The first, and most owned, is that which they call good-fellowship, one Man drinks to keep another company at it. But I would ask such a one, whether if that Man were drinking rank poyson he would pledge him for company? If he say he would not, I must tell him, that by the very same, nay, far greater reason, he is not to do this. For immoderate drinking is that very poyson; perhaps it doth not always work death immediate (yet there want not many instances of its having done even that, very many have died in their drunken fit) but that the custom of it does usually bring Men to their ends, is past doubt; and therefore though the poyson work slowly, yet it is still poyson. But however, it doth at the present work that which a wise Man would more abhor than death; it works madness, and phrenzy turns the Man into

a beast, by drowning that reason which should difference him from one. Certainly the effects of drink are such, that had being drunk been first enjoyned as a punishment, we should have thought him a more than ordinary Tyrant that had invented it.

4. A second end of drinking is said to be the maintaining of friendship, and kindness amongst Men. But this is strangely unreasonable, that Men should do that towards the maintaining of friendship, which is really the greatest mischief that can be done to any Man. Did ever any think to befriend a Man by helping to destroy his estate, his credit, his life? Yet he that thus drinks with a Man, does this and much more; he ruines his reason, yea, his soul, and yet this must be called the way of preserving of friendship. This is so ridiculous, that one would think none could own it but when he were actually drunk. But besides, alas! experience shews us, that this is fitter to beget quarrels than preserve kindness, as the many drunken brawls we every day see, with the wounds, and sometimes murders that accompany them, do witness. *Preserving of kindness.*

5. A third end is said to be the chearing of their spirits, making them merry and jolly. But sure if the mirth be such that reason must be turned out of doors before it begin, it will be very little worth; one may say with *Solomon*, Eccles. 2. 2. *The laughter of such fools is madness.* And sure they that will be drunk to *Chearing the spirits.*

put themſelves in this temper, muſt by the ſame reaſon be glad of a Frenzy, if they could but be ſure it would be of the merry ſort. But little do theſe merry folks think what ſadneſs they are all this while heaping up to themſelves, often in this World, when by ſome mad pranks they play in their jollity, they bring miſchief upon themſelves, but however certainly in another, where this mirth will be ſadly reckoned for.

Putting away cares.

6. A fourth end is ſaid to be the putting away of cares: but I ſhall ask what thoſe cares are? Be they ſuch as ſhould be put away? Perhaps they are ſome checks and remorſes of conſcience, which muſt be thus charmed. And I doubt this hath proved too effectual with many to the laying them aſleep. But this is the wickedſt folly in the World; for if thou thinkeſt not theſe checks to have ſomething conſiderable in them, why do they trouble thee? But if thou do, it is impoſſible thou canſt hope this can long ſecure thee from them. Thou mayeſt thus ſtop their mouths for a while, but they will one day cry the louder for it. Suppoſe a Thief or a Murderer knew he were purſued to be brought to Juſtice, would he, think you, to put away the fear of being hanged, fall to drinking, and in the mean time take no care for his eſcape? Or would you not think him deſperately mad, if he did? Yet this is the very caſe here, thy conſcience tells thee of thy danger, that thou muſt ere long be brought before God's Judgment-ſeat; and is it not madneſs for thee, inſtead of endeavouring to get thy pardon, to drink away the thought of thy danger?

danger? But in the ſecond place, ſuppoſe theſe cares be ſome worldly ones, and ſuch as are fit to be put away; then for ſhame do not ſo diſgrace thy Reaſon, thy Chriſtianity, as not to let them be as forcible to that end as a little drink. Thy reaſon will tell thee it is in vain to care, where care will bring no advantage: and thy Chriſtianity will direct thee to one on whom thou mayeſt *ſafely caſt all thy cares, for he careth for thee,* 1 *Pet.* 5 7. And therefore unleſs thou meaneſt to renounce being both a Man and a Chriſtian, never betake thee to this pitiful ſhift to rid thee of thy cares. But beſides this will not do the deed neither, for though it may at the preſent, whilſt thou art in the height of the drunken fit, keep thee from the ſenſe of thy cares, yet when that is over, they will return again with greater violence; and, if thou haſt any conſcience, bring a new care with them, even that which ariſeth from the guilt of ſo foul a ſin.

7. A fifth end is ſaid to be the paſſing away of Time. This, though it be as unreaſonable as any of the former; yet by the way, it ſerves to reproach idleneſs, which is, it ſeems, ſo burdenſom a thing, that even this vileſt employment is preferred before it. But this is in many a very falſe plea. For they often ſpend time at the Pot, not only when they have nothing elſe to do, but even to the neglect of their moſt neceſſary buſineſs. However it is in all a moſt unreaſonable one, for there is no Man but he may find ſomewhat or other to employ himſelf in. If he have little worldly buſineſs of his own, he may yet

Paſſing away of time.

do ſomewhat to the benefit of others; but however there is no Man but hath a Soul, and if he will look carefully to that, he need not complain for want of buſineſs; where there are ſo many corruptions to mortifie, ſo many inclinations to watch over, ſo many temptations (whereof this of drunkenneſs is not the leaſt) to reſiſt, the Graces of God to improve and ſtir up, and former neglects of all theſe to lament, ſure there can never want ſufficient employment; for all theſe require time, and ſo Men at their deaths find; for thoſe that have all their lives made it their buſineſs to drive away their time, would then give all the World to redeem it. And ſure where there is much leiſure from worldly affairs, God expects to have the more time thus employed in ſpiritual exerciſes. But it is not likely thoſe meaner ſort of perſons, to whom this book is intended, will be of the number of thoſe that have much leiſure, and therefore I ſhall no farther inſiſt on it, only I ſhall ſay this, that what degrees of leiſure they at any time have, it concerns them to employ to the benefit of their Souls, and not to beſtow it to the ruine of them, as they do, who ſpend it in drinking.

Preventing reproach.

8. A ſixth end is ſaid to be the preventing of that reproach which is by the World caſt on thoſe that will in this be ſtricter than their Neighbours. But in anſwer to this, I ſhall firſt ask, what is the harm of ſuch reproach? Sure it cannot equal the leaſt of thoſe miſchiefs drunkenneſs betrays us to. Nay, if we will take our Saviours word, it is a happi-

neſs.

neſs. *Bleſſed*, ſaith he, *are ye when men ſhall revile you, and ſay all manner of evil againſt you for my ſake*, Matth. 5. 11. And S. *Peter* tells us, 1 *Pet.* 4. 14. *If ye be reproached for the Name of Chriſt, happy are ye:* and ſure to be reproached for obedience to any command of Chriſts, is to be reproached for his Name. Secondly, Let it be remembred that at our Baptiſm we ſolemnly renounced the World; and ſhall we now ſo far conſider it, as for a few ſcoffs of it to run our ſelves on all the temporal evils before mentioned; and which is much worſe, the wrath of God and eternal deſtruction? But thirdly, if you fear reproach, why do ye do that which will bring reproach upon you from all wiſe and good Men, whoſe opinion alone is to be regarded? And it is certain, drinking is the way to bring it on you from all ſuch. And to comfort thy ſelf againſt that, by thinking thou art ſtill applauded by the fooliſh and worſt ſort of Men, is as if all the mad Men in the World ſhould agree to count themſelves the only ſober perſons, and all others mad, which yet ſure will never make them the leſs mad, nor others the leſs ſober. Laſtly, Conſider the heavy doom Chriſt hath pronounced on thoſe that are aſhamed of him, and ſo are all thoſe that for fear of reproach ſhall ſhrink from their obedience to him, *Matth.* 8. 38. *Whoſoever ſhall be aſhamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and ſinful generation, of him ſhall the Son of man be aſhamed, when he cometh in the glory of the Father with the holy Angels.* There is none but will at that day deſire to be owned by Chriſt: but whoever will not here

own him, that is, cleave faſt to his commands, notwithſtanding all the ſcorns, nay, perſecutions of the World, ſhall then certainly be caſt off by him. And he that will adventure thus to maintain his credit among a company of Fools and Mad-men, deſerves well to have it befal him: But after all this, it is not ſure that even theſe will deſpiſe thee for thy ſobriety: it is poſſible they may ſeem to do ſo to fright thee out of it; but if their hearts were ſearched, it would be found they do even againſt their wills bear a ſecret reverence to ſober perſons, and none fall more often under their ſcorn and deſpiſing, than thoſe that run with them to the ſame exceſs of riot; for even he that ſticks not to be drunk himſelf, will yet laugh at another that he ſees ſo.

Pleaſure of the drink.

9. There is a ſeventh end, which though every Man thinks too baſe to own, yet it is too plain it prevails with many; and that is the bare pleaſure of the drink: but to theſe I confeſs it will not be fit to ſay much, for he that is come to this lamentable degree of ſottiſhneſs, is not like to receive benefit by any thing can be ſaid: yet let me tell even this Man, that he of all others hath the moſt means of diſcerning his fault; for this being ſuch a ground of drinking as no body will own, he is condemned of himſelf; yea, and all his fellow drunkards too; for their denying it, is a plain ſign they acknowledge it a moſt abominable thing. And if *Eſau* were called a prophane perſon, *Heb.* 12. 6. for *ſelling but his birth-right for a meſs of pottage*, and that too when he had the neceſſity of hunger upon

on him: what name of reproach can be bad enough for him who ſells his health, his reaſon, his God, his Soul for a cup of drink, and that when he is ſo far from needing it, that perhaps he hath already more than he can keep? I ſhall ſay no more to this ſort of perſons, but let me warn all thoſe that go on in this ſin on any of the former grounds, that a little time will bring them even to this which they profeſs to loath; it being daily ſeen that thoſe which firſt were drawn into the ſin for the love of the company, at laſt continue in it for love of the drink.

10. I can think but of one end more, that is, that of bargaining. Men ſay it is neceſſary for them to drink in this one reſpect of trading with their neighbours, bargains being moſt conveniently to be ſtruck up at ſuch meetings. But this is yet a worſe end than all the reſt, for the bottom of it is an aim of cheating and defrauding others; we think when Men are in drink we ſhall the better be able to over-reach them, and ſo this adds the ſin of couzenage and defrauding to that of drunkenneſs. Now that this is indeed the intent is manifeſt, for if it were only the diſpatch of bargains were aimed at, we ſhould chuſe to take Men with their wits about them: therefore the taking them when drink hath diſtempered them can be for nothing but to make advantage of them. Yet this often proves a great folly as well as a ſin; for he that drinks with another in hope to over-reach him, doth many times prove the weaker brain'd, and becomes drunk firſt, and then he gives the other

Bargaining.

that opportunity of cheating him, which he designed for the cheating of the other. Now this end of drinking is so far from becoming an excuse, that it is a huge heightning of the sin; for if we may not drink intemperately upon any occasion, much less upon so wicked an one as is the couzening and defrauding of our brethren.

Degrees of this sin.

11. I suppose I have now shewed you the unreasonableness of those Motives, which are ordinarily brought in excuse of this sin. I am yet further to tell you, that it is not only that huge degree of drunkenness which makes Men able neither to go nor speak, which is to be lookt on as a sin, but all lower degrees, which do at all work upon the understanding, whether by dulling it and making it less fit for any imployment, or by making it too light and airy, apt to apish and ridiculous mirth, or what is worse, by inflaming Men into rage and fury. These, or whatever else make any change in the Man, are to be reckoned in to this sin of drunkenness: Nay, further, the drinking beyond the natural ends of drinking, that is, beyond moderate refreshment, is a sin, though by the strength of a Man's brain it makes not the least change in him, and therefore those that are not actually drunk, yet can spend whole days, or any considerable part of them in drinking, are so far from being innocent, that that greater woe belongs to them which is pronounced, *Isa.* 5. 22. against those that are mighty to drink. For though such a Man may make a shift to preserve his wits, yet that wit serves him to very little purpose,

purpoſe, when his imployment is ſtill but the ſame with him that is the moſt ſottiſhly drunk, that is, to pour down drink.

12. Nay, this Man is guilty of the greateſt waſte; Firſt, of the good creatures of God; That drink which is by God's providence intended for the refreſhing and relieving of us, is abuſed and miſ-ſpent when it is drunk beyond that meaſure which thoſe ends require; and ſure there is not the meaneſt of theſe creatures we enjoy, but the abuſe of them ſhall one day be accounted for, and he that drinks longeſt hath the moſt of that guilt. But in the ſecond place, this is a waſte of that which is much more precious, our time, which is allowed us by God to work out our Salvation in, and muſt be ſtrictly reckoned for, and therefore ought every minute of it to be moſt thriftily husbanded to that end in actions of good life; but when it is thus laid out, it tends to the direct contrary, even the working out our damnation. Beſides, he that thus drinks, though he eſcape being drunk himſelf, he is yet guilty of all the drunkenneſs that any of his company fall under; for he gives them encouragement to drink on by his Example, eſpecially if he be one of any Authority; but if he be one whoſe company the reſt are fond of, his company is then a certain enſnaring of them, for then they will drink too, rather than loſe him. There is yet a greater fault that many of theſe ſtronger brain'd drinkers are guilty of, that is, the ſetting themſelves purpoſely to make others drunk, playing, *The great guilt of the ſtrong drinkers.*

as

as it were, a prize at it, and counting it matter of triumph and victory to see others fall before them: This is a most horrible wickedness, it is the making our selves the Devil's Factors, endeavouring all we can to draw our poor brethren into eternal misery, by betraying them to so grievous a sin; and therefore it may well be reckoned as the highest step of this vice of drinking, as having in it the sin of mischieving others added to the excess in our selves. And though it be lookt upon in the World as a matter only of jest and merriment to make others drunk, that we may sport our selves with their ridiculous behaviour, yet that mirth will have a sad conclusion, there being a woe expresly threatned by God to this very sin, *Hab.* 2. 15. *Wo unto him that giveth his neighbour drink, that puttest thy bottle to him, and makest him drunk, that thou mayest look on their nakedness:* And sure he buys his idle passtime very dear, that takes it with such a Woe attending it.

The great mischiefs of this sin.

13. I have now gone through the several motives to, and degrees of this sin of drunkenness, wherein I have been the more particular, because it is a sin so strangely reigning amongst us: no Condition, no Age, or scarce Sex free from it, to the great dishonour of God, reproach of Christianity, and ruine not only of our own Souls hereafter, but even of all our present advantages and happiness in this life; there being no sin which betrays each single committer to more mischiefs in his understanding, his health, his credit,

credit, his eſtate, than this one doth. And we have reaſon to believe this ſin is one of thoſe common crying guilts which have long lain heavy upon this Nation, and pulled down thoſe many ſad judgments we have groaned under.

14. Therefore, Chriſtian Reader, let me now intreat, nay conjure thee by all that tenderneſs and love thou oughteſt to have to the honour of God, the credit of thy Chriſtian profeſſion, eternal welfare of thine own Soul, the proſperity of the Church and Nation, whereof thou art a member; Nay, by that love which certainly thou haſt to thy own temporal welfare, to think ſadly of what hath been ſpoken; and then judge, whether there be any pleaſure in this ſin which can be any tolerable recompence for all thoſe miſchiefs it brings with it. I am confident no Man in his wits can think there is, and if there be not, then be aſhamed to be any longer that fool, which ſhall make ſo wretched a bargain, but begin at this inſtant a firm and a faithful reſolution, never once more to be guilty of this ſwiniſh ſin, how often ſoever thou haſt heretofore fallen into it, and in the fear of God betake thee to a ſtrict temperance, which when thou haſt done thou wilt find thou haſt made, not only a gainful but a pleaſant exchange; for there is no Man that hath tried both courſes, but his own heart will tell him there is infinitely more preſent comfort and pleaſure in ſobriety and temperance than ever all his drunken revellings afforded him.

Exhortation to forſake it.

15. The

The difficulties of doing so considered.

15. The main difficulty is the first breaking off the custom, and that arises partly from ourselves; partly from others. That from our selves may be of two sorts; the first is, when by the habit of drinking, we have brought such false thirst upon our selves that our bodies seem to require it, and this wants nothing but a little patience to overcome. Do but refrain some few days, and it will afterwards grow easie; for the hardness arising only from custom, the breaking off that does the business. If thou say, it is very uneasie to do so, consider, whether if thou hadst some disease which would certainly kill thee if thou didst not for some little time refrain immoderate drinking, thou wouldst not rather forbear than die. If thou wouldst not, thou art so brutish a soul, that it is in vain to perswade thee; but if thou hadst, then consider how unreasonable it is for thee not to do it in this case also; the habit of drinking may well pass for a mortal disease, it proves so very often to the body, but will most certainly to the Soul; and therefore it is madness to stick at that uneasiness in the cure of this, which thou wouldst submit to in a less danger. Set therefore but a resolute purpose to endure that little trouble for a small time, and this first difficulty is conquered, for after thou hast a while refrained, it will be perfectly easie to do so still.

Seeming necessity of drink.

16. The

16. The second difficulty is that of ſpending the time, which thoſe that have made drinking their trade and buſineſs, know ſcarce how to diſpoſe of. But the very naming of this difficulty directs to the cure; get thee ſome buſineſs, ſomewhat to employ thy ſelf in, which, as I have already ſhewed, will be eaſily found by all ſorts of perſons; but thoſe meaner, to whom I now write, can ſure never want it ready at hand, they being generally ſuch as are to be maintained by their labour, and therefore to them I need only give this advice, to be diligent in that buſineſs they have, to follow that cloſe as they ought; and they will have little occaſion to ſeek out this way of ſpending their time. *Want of imployment.*

17. There is another ſort of difficulty, which I told you ariſes from others, and that is either from their perſwaſions or reproaches. It is very likely, if thy old companions ſee thee begin to fall off, they will ſet hard to thee, to bring thee back to thy old courſe, they will urge to thee the unkindneſs of forſaking the company of thy friends, the ſadneſs of renouncing all that mirth and jollity, which good fellows (as they call them) enjoy, and if thou canſt not thus be won, they will affright thee with the reproach of the World, and ſo try if they can mock thee out of thy ſobriety. *Perſwaſions and reproaches of men.*

18. The

The means of resisting them.

18. The way to overcome this difficulty is to foresee it: therefore when thou first entereſt on thy courſe of temperance, thou art to make account thou ſhalt meet with theſe (perhaps many other) temptations; and that thou mayeſt make a right judgment, whether they be worthy to prevail with thee, take them before-hand and weigh them, conſider whether that falſe kindneſs that is maintained among Men by drinking, be worthy to be compared with that real and everlaſting kindneſs of God, which is loſt by it; whether that fooliſh, vain mirth bear any weight with the preſent joys of a good conſcience here, or with thoſe greater of Heaven hereafter. Laſtly, whether the unjuſt reproach of wicked Men, the ſhame of the World be ſo terrible, as the juſt reproof of thine own conſcience at the preſent, and that eternal confuſion of face that ſhall befal all thoſe, that go on in this ſin, at the laſt day; weigh all theſe, I ſay, I need not ſay in the balance of the Sanctuary, but even in the ſcales of common reaſon, and ſure thou wilt be forced to pronounce, that the motives to temperance infinitely outweigh thoſe againſt it. When thou haſt thus adviſedly judged, then fix thy reſolution accordingly; and whenever any of theſe temptations come to ſtagger thee, remember thou haſt formerly weighed them, knoweſt the juſt value of them, and that they are a moſt unworthy price for thoſe precious advantages thou muſt give in exchange

Weigh the advantages with the hurt.

exchange for them. And therefore hold fast thy resolution, and with indignation reject all motions to the contrary.

19. But be sure thou thus reject them at their very first tender, and do not yield in the least degree; for if once thou giveſt ground, thou art loſt, the ſin will by little and little prevail upon thee. Thus we ſee many, who have profeſſed to be reſolved upon great temperance, yet for want of this care, have adventured into the company of good fellows; when they have been there, they have at the firſt been over-intreated to take a cup, after that another, till at laſt they have taken their rounds as freely as any of them, and in that flood of drink drowned all their ſober reſolutions. Therefore whoever thou art, that doſt really deſire to forſake the ſin, take care to avoid the occaſions and beginnings of it; to which end it will be good openly to declare and own thy purpoſes of ſobriety; that ſo thou mayeſt diſcourage Men from aſſaulting thee. But if either thou art aſhamed to own it, or ſeemeſt to be ſo, they will quickly make uſe of that ſhame to bring thee to break it.

Reject the temptation at the very beginning.

20 If thou be thus wary to keep thee from the firſt beginnings, thou art then ſure never to be overtaken with this ſin; for it is like the keeping the out-works of a beſieged City, which, ſo long as they are ſtoutly defended, there is no danger; but if they be either ſurprized or yielded, the City cannot long hold out.

The ſecurity of doing ſo.

The

The advice therefore of the Wiſe man is very agreeable to this matter, *Eccleſ.* 19. 1. *He that deſpiſeth ſmall things ſhall periſh by little and little.* But becauſe, as the *Pſalmiſt* ſaith, *Pſal.* 127. 1. *Except the Lord keep the City the watchman waketh but in vain:* therefore to this guard of thy ſelf add thy moſt earneſt prayers to God, that he will alſo watch over thee, and by the ſtrength of his grace enable thee to reſiſt all temptations to this ſin.

The efficacy of theſe means if not hindred by love of the ſin.

21. If thou do in the ſincerity of thy heart uſe theſe means, there is no doubt but thou wilt be able to overcome this vice, how long ſoever thou haſt been accuſtomed to it; therefore if thou do ſtill remain under the power of it, never excuſe thy ſelf by the impoſſibility of the task, but rather accuſe the falſeneſs of thy own heart, that hath ſtill ſuch a love to this ſin, that thou wilt not ſet roundly to the means of ſubduing it.

That love makes a man loth to believe it dangerous.

22. Perhaps the great commonneſs of the ſin and thy particular cuſtom of it may have made it ſo much thy familiar, thy boſom acquaintance, that thou art loth to entertain hard thoughts of it, very unwilling thou art to think that it means thee any hurt, and therefore are apt to ſpeak peace to thy ſelf, to hope that either this is no ſin, or at moſt but a frailty, ſuch as will not bar thee out of Heaven: but deceive not thy ſelf, for thou mayeſt

as well say there is no Heaven, as that drunkenneſs ſhall not keep thee thence; I am ſure the ſame word of God which tells us there is ſuch a place of happineſs, tells us alſo that drunkards are of the number of thoſe that ſhall not inherit it, 1 *Cor.* 6. 10. And again, *Gal.* 5. 21. Drunkenneſs is reckoned among thoſe works of the fleſh, which they that do *ſhall not inherit the Kingdom of God* And indeed had not theſe plain texts, yet mere reaſon would tells us the ſame, that that is a place of infinite purity, ſuch as fleſh and bloud, till it be refined and purified, is not capable of, as the Apoſtle tells us, 1 *Cor.* 15. 53. and if as we are mere Men, we are too groſs and impure for it, we muſt ſure be more ſo when we have changed our ſelves into Swine, the fouleſt of beaſts, we are then prepared for the Devils to enter into, as they did into the herd, *Mark* 5. 13. and that not only ſome one or two, but a Legion; a troop and multitude of them. And of this we daily ſee examples, for where this ſin of drunkenneſs hath taken poſſeſſion, it uſually comes as an harbinger to abundance of others; each act of drunkenneſs prepares a Man not only for another of the ſame ſin, but of others: luſt and rage, and all brutiſh appetites are then let looſe, and ſo a Man brings himſelf under that curſe, which was the ſaddeſt *David* knew how to foretel to any, *Pſalm* 63. 28. *The falling from one wickedneſs to another.* If all this be not enough to affright thee out of this drunken fit, thou mayſt ſtill wallow in thy vomit, continue in this ſottiſh, ſenſeleſs condition, till the flames of Hell rowſe thee, and then thou wilt

by

by ſad experience find what now thou wilt not believe, *That the end of thoſe things,* as the Apoſtle ſaith, *Rom 6. 21. is death.* God in his infinite mercy timely awake the hearts of all that are in this ſin, that by a timely forſaking it they may *fly from the wrath to come.* I have now done with this ſecond part of Temperance, concerning Drinking.

SUNDAY IX.

Temperance in Sleep: the rule of it, &c. Miſchiefs of Sloth, of Recreations, Cautions to be obſerved in them, of Apparel, &c.

Sect. 1. *Sleep.* THE Third part of TEMPERANCE concerns SLEEP: And Temperance in that alſo muſt be meaſured by the end for which ſleep was ordained by God, which was only the refreſhing and ſupporting of our frail bodies, which being of ſuch a Temper that continual labour and toil tires and wearies them out, Sleep comes as a medicine to that wearineſs, as a repairer of that decay, that ſo we may be enabled to ſuch labours as the duties of Religion or works of our Calling require of us. Sleep was intended to make us more profitable, not more idle;

idle; as we give reſt to our beaſts, not that we are pleaſed with their doing nothing, but that they may do us the better ſervice.

The Rule of Temperance therein.

2. By this therefore you may judge what is temperate ſleeping; to wit, that which tends to the refreſhing and making us more lively and fit for action, and to that end a moderate degree ſerves beſt. It will be impoſſible to ſet down juſt how many hours is that moderate degree, becauſe, as in eating, ſo in ſleep, ſome conſtitutions require more than others: Every Mans own experience muſt in this judge for him, but then let him judge uprightly, and not conſult with his ſloth in the caſe; for that will ſtill, with *Solomons* ſluggard, cry, *A little more ſleep, a little more ſlumber, a little more folding of the hands to ſleep*, Prov. 24. 23. But take only ſo much as he really finds to tend to the end foremention'd.

The many Sins that follow the tranſgreſſion of it.

3. He that doth not thus limit himſelf falls into ſeveral ſins under this general one of ſloth: as firſt, he waſtes his time, that precious talent which was committed to him by God to improve, which he that ſleeps away, doth like him in the Goſpel, *Matth.* 25. 18. *Hides it in the earth*, when he ſhould be trading with it; and you know what was the doom of that unprofitable ſervant, Verſe 30. *Caſt ye him into outer darkneſs*: he that gives himſelf to darkneſs of ſleep here, ſhall there have darkneſs without ſleep, but with *weeping and gnaſhing of teeth.*

teeth. Secondly, he injures his body: immoderate ſleep fills that full of diſeaſes, makes it a very ſink of humours, as daily experience ſhews us. Thirdly, he injures his Soul alſo, and that not only in robbing it of the ſervice of the body, but in dulling its proper faculties, making them uſeleſs and unfit for thoſe employments to which God hath deſigned them; of all which ill husbandry the poor Soul muſt one day give account. Nay, laſtly, he affronts and deſpiſes God himſelf in it, by croſſing the very end of his creation, which was to ſerve God in an active obedience; but he that ſleeps away his life, directly thwarts and contradicts that, and when God ſaith, *Man is born to labour*, his practice ſaith the direct contrary, that Man was born to reſt. Take heed therefore of giving thy ſelf to immoderate ſleep, which is the committing of ſo many ſins in one.

Other miſchiefs of ſloth.

4. But beſides the ſin of it, it is alſo very hurtful in other reſpects, it is the ſure bane of thy outward eſtate, wherein the ſluggiſh perſon ſhall never thrive; according to that obſervation of the Wiſe man, *Prov.* 23. 21. *Drowſineſs ſhall cover a man with rags*; that is, the ſlothful Man ſhall want convenient clothing, nay, indeed it can ſcarce be ſaid, that the ſluggard lives. Sleep you know is a kind of death, and he that gives himſelf up to it, what doth he but die before his time? Therefore if untimely death be to be lookt upon as a curſe, it muſt needs be a ſtrange folly to chuſe that from our own ſloth which we dread ſo much from God's hand.

5. The

5. The fourth part of Temperance concerns Recreations, which are sometimes necessary both to the body and the mind of a Man, neither of them being able to endure a constant toil without somewhat of refreshment between; and therefore there is a very lawful use of them; but to make it so, it will be necessary to observe these Cautions. *Temperance in Recreation.*

6. First, We must take care that the kind of them be lawful, that they be such as have nothing of sin in them; we must not to recreate our selves do any thing which is dishonourable to God, or injurious to our neighbour, as they do who make profane or filthy backbiting discourse their recreation. Secondly, We must take care that we use it with moderation: and to do so, we must first be sure not to spend too much time upon it, but remember that the end of recreation is to fit us for business, not to be it self a business to us. Secondly, we must not be too vehement and earnest in it, nor set our hearts too much upon it, for that will both ensnare us to the using too much of it, and it will divert and take off our minds from our more necessary imployments: like School-boys, who after a play-time, know not how to set themselves to their Books again. Lastly, we must not set up to our selves any other end of recreations but that lawful one, of giving us moderate refreshment. *Cautions to be observed in them.*

7. As

Undue ends of Sports.

7. As first, we are not to use Sports only to pass away our time which we ought to study how to redeem, not fling away; and when it is remembred how great a work we have here to do, the *making our calling and election sure*, the securing our title to Heaven hereafter, and how uncertain we are what time shall be allowed us for that purpose; it will appear our time is that which of all other things we ought most industriously to improve. And therefore sure we have little need to contrive ways of driving that away which flies so fast of it self, and is so impossible to recover. Let them that can spend whole Days and Nights at Cards and Dice, and idle pastimes consider this, and withal, whether they ever bestowed a quarter of that time towards that great business of their lives, for which all their time was given them, and then think what a woful reckoning they are like to make when they come at last to account for that precious treasure of their time. Secondly, we must not let our covetousness have any thing to do in our recreations; if we play at any Game, let the end of our doing it be merely to recreate our selves, not to win money, and to that purpose be sure never to play for any considerable matter, for if thou do, thou wilt bring thy self into two dangers, the one of covetousness, and a greedy desire of winning, the other of rage and anger at thy ill fortune, if thou happen to lose; both which will be apt to draw thee into other sins besides themselves. Covetousness will tempt thee to cheat and cozen in gaming, and

and anger to ſwearing and curſing, as common experience ſhews us too often. If thou find thy ſelf apt to fall into either of theſe in thy gaming, thou muſt either take ſome courſe to ſecure thy ſelf againſt them, or thou muſt not permit thy ſelf to play at all: for though moderate play be in it ſelf not unlawful, yet if it be the occaſion of ſin, it is ſo to thee, and therefore muſt not be ventured on. For if Chriſt commands us ſo ſtrictly to avoid temptations, that if our very eyes or hands offend us (that is, prove ſnares to us) we muſt rather part with them, than to be drawn to ſin by them: how much rather muſt we part with any of theſe unneceſſary ſports, than run the hazard of offending God by them? He that ſo plays, lays his Soul to ſtake, which is too great a prize to be plaid away. Beſides, he loſes all the recreation and ſport he pretends to aim at, and inſtead of that ſets himſelf to a greater toil than any of thoſe labours are he was to eaſe by it. For ſure the deſires and fears of the covetous, the impatience and rage of the angry man are more real pains than any the moſt laborious work can be.

8. The laſt part of Temperance is that of APPAREL, which we are again to meaſure by the agreeableneſs to the ends for which cloathing ſhould be uſed. Thoſe are eſpecially theſe three: firſt, the hiding of nakedneſs. This was the firſt occaſion of apparel, as you may read, *Gen.* 3. 21. and was the effect of the firſt ſin; and therefore when

Temperance in apparel.

Apparel deſigned for covering of ſhame.

when we remember the original of cloaths, we have ſo little reaſon to be proud of them, that on the contrary we have cauſe to be humbled and aſhamed, as having loſt that innocency which was a much greater ornament than any the moſt glorious apparel can be. From this end of cloathing we are likewiſe engaged to have our Apparel modeſt, ſuch as may anſwer this end of covering our ſhame: And therefore all immodeſt faſhions of Apparel, which may either argue the wantonneſs of the wearer, or provoke that of the beholder, are to be avoided.

Fencing from cold.

9. A ſecond end of Apparel is the fencing the body from cold, thereby to preſerve the health thereof. And this end we muſt likewiſe obſerve in our cloathing; we muſt wear ſuch kind of habits, as may keep us in that convenient warmth, which is neceſſary to our healths. And this is tranſgreſt, when out of the vanity of being in every phantaſtick faſhion, we put our ſelves in ſuch cloathing, as either will not defend us from cold, or is ſome other way ſo uneaſie that it is rather a hurt than a benefit to our bodies to be ſo clad. This is a moſt ridiculous folly, and yet that which People that take a pride in their cloaths are uſually guilty of.

Diſtinction of perſons.

10. A third end of Apparel is the diſtinguiſhing or differencing of perſons, and that firſt in reſpect of Sex, ſecondly, in reſpect of qualities. Firſt, cloaths are to make difference of Sex; this hath been obſerved by all Nations, the

the habits of Men and Women have always been different. And God himself expressly provided for it among the *Jews*, by commanding that the Man should not wear the Apparel of the Woman, nor the Woman of the Man. But then secondly, there is also a distinction of qualities to be observed in apparel; God hath placed some in a higher condition than others, and in proportion to their condition, it befits their cloathing to be. Gorgeous apparel, our Saviour tells us, *is for Kings Courts*, Luke 7. 25. Now this end of apparel should also be observed. Men and Women should content themselves with that sort of cloathing which agrees to their Sex and condition, not striving to exceed, and equal that of a higher rank, nor yet making it matter of envy, among those of their own estate, vying who shall be finest; but let every Man cloath himself in such sober attire as suits his place and calling, and not think himself disparaged, if another of his neighbours have better than he.

11. And let all remember that cloaths are things, which add no true worth to any, and therefore it is an intolerable vanity to spend any considerable part either of their thoughts, time or wealth upon them, or to value themselves ever the more for them, or despise their poor brethren that want them. But if they desire to adorn themselves, let it be as S. *Peter* adviseth the Women of his time, 1 *Pet.* 3. 4. *In the hidden man of the heart, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit.* Let them cloath themselves as richly as is possible with all Christian vertues, and that is the raiment that will set them out

lovely in God's eyes, yea, and in mens too, who unleſs they be fools and Idiots, will more value thee for being good than fine; and ſure one plain Coat thou putteſt upon a poor Man's back will become thee, than twenty rich ones thou ſhalt put upon thine own.

Too much ſparing a fault as well as exceſs.

12. I have now gone through the ſeveral parts of temperance, I ſhall now in concluſion add this general caution, that though in all theſe particulars I have taken notice only of the one fault of exceſs, yet it is poſſible there may be one on the other hand; Men may deny their bodies that which they neceſſarily require to their ſupport, and well-being. This is, I believe, a fault not ſo common as the other, yet we ſometimes ſee ſome very niggardly perſons, that are guilty of it, that cannot find in their hearts to borrow ſo much from their cheſts as may fill their bellies, or cloath their backs, and that are ſo intent upon the world, ſo moiling and drudging in it, that they cannot afford themſelves that competent time of ſleep, or recreation, that is neceſſary. If any that hath read the former part of this Diſcourſe be of this temper, let him not comfort himſelf, that he is not guilty of thoſe exceſſes there complained of, and therefore conclude himſelf a good Chriſtian, becauſe he is not intemperate; for whoever is this covetous creature, his abſtaining ſhall not be counted to him as the vertue of temperance, for it is not the love of temperance, but wealth, that makes him refrain; and that is ſo far from being praiſe-worthy, that it is that great ſin which the Apoſtle tells

tells us, 1 *Tim.* 6. 10. *is the root of all evil*; such a mans body will one day rise in judgment against him, for defrauding it of its due portion, those moderate refreshments and comforts which God hath allowed it. This is an Idolatry beyond that of offering the children to *Moloch*, *Lev.* 20 3. they offered but their children, but this covetous wretch sacrifices himself to his god Mammon, whilst he often destroys his health, his life, yea, finally his Soul too, to save his purse. I have now done with the second head of duty, that to our selves, contained by the Apostle under the word Soberly.

SUNDAY X.

Of duties to our Neighbour. Of Justice, Negative, Positive. Of the sin of Murther, of the hainousness of it, the punishment of it, and the strange discoveries thereof. Of Maiming, &c.

Sect. 1. I Come now to the third part of Duties, those to our NEIGHBOUR, which are by the Apostle summed up in gross in the word [Righteousness] by which is meant not only bare Justice, but all kind of Charity also, for *Duty to our Neighbour.*

that is now by the law of Christ become a debt to our neighbour, and it is a piece of unrighteousness to defraud him of it. I shall therefore build all the particular duties we owe to our Neighbour, on those two general ones, Justice and Charity.

Justice.

2. I begin with JUSTICE, whereof there are two parts, the one Negative, the other Positive: The negative Justice is to do no wrong, or injury to any. The positive Justice is to do right to all; that is, to yield them whatsoever appertains or is due unto them. I shall first speak of the Negative Justice, the not injuring or wronging any. Now because a Man is capable of receiving wrong in several respects; this first part of Justice extends it self into several branches, answerable to those capacities of injury. A man may be injured either in his Soul, his Body, his Possessions, or Credit; and therefore this duty of Negative Justice lays a restraint on us in every of these. That we do no wrong to any Man in respect either of his Soul, his Body, his Possessions, or his Credit.

Negative.

To the Soul.

3. First, This Justice ties us to do no hurt to his Soul; and here my first work must be to examine what harm it is that the Soul can receive; it is, we know, an invisible substance, which we cannot reach with our eye, much less with our swords and weapons, yet for all that it is capable of being hurt and wounded; and that even to death.

4. Now

4. Now the Soul may be conſidered either in a natural or ſpiritual ſence; in the natural it ſignifies that which we uſually call the mind of a Man, and this, we all know, may be wounded with grief or ſadneſs, as *Solomon* ſaith, *Prov.* 14. 13. *By ſorrow of heart the ſpirit is broken.* Therefore whoever doth cauſleſly afflict or grieve his neighbour, he tranſgreſſeth this part of juſtice, and hurts and wrongs his ſoul. This ſort of injury malicious and ſpiteful Men are very often guilty of, they will do things, by which themſelves reap no good, nay, often much harm, only that they may vex and grieve another; this is a moſt ſavage, inhumane humour, thus to take pleaſure in the ſadneſs and afflictions of others; and whoever harbours it in his heart, may truly be ſaid to be poſſeſt with the Devil, for it is the nature only of thoſe accurſed ſpirits to delight in the miſeries of Men; and till that be caſt out they are fit only to dwell as the poſſeſt perſon did, *Mark* 5. 2. *Among graves and tombs*, where there are none capable of receiving affliction by them. *In the natural ſence.*

5. But the Soul may be conſidered alſo in the ſpiritual ſence, and ſo it ſignifies that immortal part of us which muſt live eternally, either in bliſs or woe in another world. And the Soul thus underſtood is capable of two ſorts of harm: Firſt, that of ſin; Secondly, that of puniſhment; the latter whereof is certainly the conſequent of the former; and therefore though God be the inflicter of puniſhment, yet ſince it *In the ſpiritual.*

is but the effect of ſin, we may juſtly reckon, that he that draws a man to ſin, is likewiſe the betrayer of him to puniſhment, as he that gives a man a mortal wound, is the cauſe of his death; therefore under the evil of ſin both are contained, ſo that I need ſpeak only of that.

Drawing to ſin the greateſt injury.

6. And ſure there cannot be a higher ſort of wrong, than the bringing this great evil upon the Soul. Sin is the diſeaſe and wound of the Soul, as being the direct contrary to Grace; which is the health and ſoundneſs of it; now this wound we give to every ſoul, whom we do by any means whatſoever draw into ſin.

Direct means of it.

7. The ways of doing that are divers, I ſhall mention ſome of them, whereof though ſome are more direct than others, yet all tend to the ſame end. Of the more direct ones there is, firſt, the commanding of ſin, that is, when a perſon that hath power over another ſhall require him to do ſomething which is unlawful; an example of this we have in *Nebuchadnezzar*'s commanding the worſhip of the golden Image, *Dan.* 3. 4. and his copy is imitated by any Parent or Maſter, who ſhall require of his child or ſervant to do any unlawful act. Secondly, there is counſelling of ſin, when men adviſe and perſwade others to any wickedneſs: Thus *Job*'s Wife counſelled her Husband to curſe God, *Job* 2. 7. And *Achitophel* adviſed *Abſalom* to go in to his Fathers Concubines, 2 *Sam.* 16. 21. Thirdly, there is enticing and alluring

alluring to sin, by setting before Men the pleasures or profits they shall reap by it. Of this sort of enticement *Solomon* gives warning, *Prov.* 1. 10. *My son if sinners entice thee, consent thou not; if they say, come with us, let us lay wait for blood, let us lurk privily for the innocent without a cause,* &c. and verse the 13. you may see what is the bait, by which they seek to allure them, *We shall find all precious substance; we shall fill our houses with spoil. Cast in thy lot among us, let us all have one purse.* Fourthly, there is assistance in sin, that is, when Men aid and help others either in contriving or acting a sin. Thus *Jonadab* helpt *Ammon* in plotting the ravishing of his Sister, 2 *Sam.* 13. All these are direct means of bringing this great evil of sin upon our brethren.

Indirect.

1. There are also others, which though they seem more indirect, may yet be as effectual towards that ill end: as first, example in sin, he that sets others an ill pattern, does his part to make them imitate it, and too often it hath that effect; there being generally nothing more forcible to bring men into any sinful practice, than the seeing it used by others, as might be instanced in many sins to which there is no other temptation, but their being in fashion. Secondly, there is incouragement in sin, when either by approving, or else at least by not shewing a dislike, we give others confidence to go on in their wickedness. A third means is by justifying and defending any sinful act of anothers, for by that we do not only confirm him in his evil, but endanger the drawing others to the like, who may be the

more inclinable to it, when they ſhall hear it ſo pleaded for. Laſtly, the bringing up any reproach upon ſtrict and Chriſtian living, as thoſe do who have the ways of God in deriſion: this is a means to affright Men from the practice of duty, when they ſee it will bring them to be ſcorned and deſpiſed; this is worſe than all the former, not only in reſpect of the Man who is guilty of it (as it is an evidence of the great prophaneneſs of his own heart) but alſo in regard of others, it having a more general ill effect than any of the former can have; it being the betraying Men, not only to ſome ſingle acts of diſobedience to Chriſt, but even to the caſting off all ſubjection to him; by all theſe means we may draw on our ſelves this great guilt of injuring and wounding the ſouls of our brethren.

Men ſadly to conſider whom they have thus injured.

9. It would be too long for me to inſtance in all the ſeveral ſins, in which it is uſual for Men to enſnare others; as drunkenneſs, uncleanneſs, rebellion, and a multitude more. But it will concern every Man for his own particular, to conſider ſadly what miſchiefs of this kind he hath done to any, by all, or any of theſe means, and to weigh well the greatneſs of the injury. Men are apt to boaſt of their innocency towards their Neighbours, that they have done wrong to no Man; but God knows many that thus brag, are of all others the moſt injurious perſons: perhaps they have not maimed his body, nor ſtoln his goods, but alas! the body is but the caſe and cover of the Man, and the

the goods ſome appurtenances to that, 'tis the ſoul as the man, and that they can wound and pierce without remorſe, and yet with the adulteress, *Prov.* 30. 20. *ſay, they have done no wickedneſs*; but glory of their friendly behaviour to thoſe whom they thus betray to eternal ruine; for whomſoever thou haſt drawn to any ſin, thou haſt done thy part to aſcertain to thoſe endleſs flames. And then think with thy ſelf how baſe a treachery this is: thou wouldeſt call him a treacherous Villain, that ſhould, while he pretends to embrace a Man, ſecretly ſtab him: but this of thine is as far beyond that, as the ſoul is of more value than the body: and Hell worſe than death. And remember yet farther, that beſides the cruelty of it to thy poor brother, it is alſo moſt dangerous to thy ſelf, it being that againſt which Chriſt hath pronounced a woe, *Matth.* 18. 7. and Verſe 6. he tells us that *whoever ſhall offend* (that is, draw into ſin) *any of thoſe little ones, it were better for him that a milſtone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the Sea.* Thou mayeſt plunge thy poor brother into perdition, but as it is with wreſtlers, he that gives another a fall, commonly falls with him, ſo thou art like to bear him company to that place of torment.

10. Let therefore thy own and his danger beget in thee a ſenſe of the greatneſs of this ſin, this horrid piece of injuſtice to the precious ſoul of thy neighbour. Bethink thy ſelf ſeriouſly to whom thou haſt been thus cruel; whom thou haſt enticed to drinking, adviſed to rebellion,

Heartily to bewail it.

rebellion, allured to luſt, ſtirred up to rage, whom thou haſt aſſiſted or incouraged in any ill courſe, or diſcouraged and diſheartned by thy prophane ſcoffings at piety in general, or at any conſcionable ſtrict walking of his in particular; and then draw up a bill of indictment; accuſe and condemn thy ſelf as a *Cain*, a murderer of thy brother, heartily and deeply bewail all thy guilts of this kind, and reſolve never once more to be a ſtumbling block, as S. *Paul* calls it, *Rom.* 14. in thy brothers way.

Endeavour to repair it.

11. But this is not all, there muſt be ſome fruits of this repentance brought forth: now in all ſins of injuſtice, reſtitution is a neceſſary fruit of repentance, and ſo it is here, thou haſt committed an act (perhaps many) of high injuſtice to the ſoul of thy brother; thou haſt robbed it of its innocency, of its title to Heaven, thou muſt now endeavour to reſtore all this to it again, by being more earneſt and induſtrious to win him to repentance, than ever thou wert to draw him to ſin: uſe now as much art to convince him of the danger, as ever thou didſt to flatter him with the pleaſures of his vice; in a word, countermine thy ſelf by uſing all thoſe methods and means to recover him, that thou didſt to deſtroy him, and be more diligent and zealous in it, for 'tis neceſſary thou ſhouldſt; both in regard of him and thy ſelf. Firſt in reſpect of him, becauſe there is in Man's nature ſo much a greater promptneſs and readineſs to evil than to good, that there will need much more pains and diligence to inſtil the one into him, than

than the other: beſides, the man is ſuppoſed to be already accuſtomed to the contrary, which will add much to the difficulty of the work. Then in reſpect of thy ſelf, if thou be a true penitent, thou wilt think thy ſelf obliged, as S. *Paul* did, *To labour more abundantly*, and wilt be aſhamed, that when thou art trading for God, bringing back a Soul to him, thou ſhouldſt not purſue it with more earneſtneſs than while thou wert an agent of Satans; beſides, the remembrance that thou wert a means of bringing this poor Soul into this ſnare, muſt neceſſarily quicken thy diligence to get him out of it. So much for the firſt part of negative Juſtice, in reſpect of the Souls of our brethren.

Negative Juſtice to the body.

12. The ſecond concerns the bodies, and to thoſe alſo this juſtice binds thee to do no wrong nor violence.

In reſpect of the life.

Now of wrongs to the body there may be ſeveral degrees, the higheſt of them is killing, taking away the life; this is forbid in the very letter of the ſixth Commandment; *Thou ſhalt do no murder.*

Several ways of being guilty of Murder.

13. Murder may be committed either by open violence; when a man either by ſword, or any other Inſtrument takes away anothers life, immediately and directly, or it may be done ſecretly and treacherouſly, as *David* murdered *Uriah*, not with his own ſword, but with the ſword of the Children of *Ammon*, 2 *Sam.* 12. 17.

17. And *Jezebel Naboth* by a false accusation, 1 *Kings* 21. 13. And so divers have committed this sin of murther by poison, false-witness, or some such concealed ways. The former is commonly the effect of a sudden rage, the latter hath several originals; sometimes it proceeds from some old malice fixt in the heart towards the person; sometimes from some covetous or ambitious desires; such an one stands in a Man's way to his profit or preferment, and therefore he must be removed; and sometimes again it is to cover shame, as in the case of Strumpets, that murther their Infants that they may not betray their filthiness. But besides these more direct ways of killing, there is another, and that is, when by our perswasions and enticements we draw a Man to do that which tends to the shortning of his life, and is apparent to do so; he that makes his neighbour drunk, if by that drunkenness the Man comes to any mortal hurt, which he would have escaped if he had been sober, he that made him drunk is not clear of his death; or if he die not by any such sudden accident, yet if drinking cast him into a disease, and that disease kill him, I know not how he that drew him to that excess can acquit himself of his murder in the eyes of God, though humane Laws touch him not. I wish those who make it their business to draw in customers to that trade of debauchery, would consider it. There is yet another way of bringing this guilt upon our selves; and that is by inciting and stirring up others to it, or to that degree of anger and revenge which produces it; and he that sets two persons at variance,

ance, or seeing them already so, blows the coals, if murder ensue, he certainly hath his share in the guilt, which is a consideration that ought to affright all from having any thing to do in the kindling or increasing of contention.

14. Now for the hainousness of this sin of Murther, I suppose none can be ignorant, that it is of the deepest die, a most loud crying sin. This we may see in the first act of this kind, that ever was committed, *Abels* bloud crieth from the earth, as God tells *Cain*, *Gen.* 4. 10. Yea, the guilt of this sin is such, that it leaves a stain even upon the Land where it is committed, such as is not to be washed out, but by the bloud of the murtherer; as appears, *Deut.* 19. 12, 13. The Land cannot be purged of bloud, but by the bloud of him that shed it; and therefore though in other cases the flying to the Altar secured a Man, yet in this of wilful murder no such refuge was allowed, but such a one was to be taken even thence, and delivered up to justice, *Exod.* 21. 14. *Thou shalt take him from my Altar that he may die.* And it is yet farther observable, that the only two Precepts which the Scripture mentions, as given to *Noah* after the flood, were both in relation to this sin; that of not eating bloud, *Gen* 9. 4. being a ceremony, to beget in Men a greater horror of this sin of murther, and so intended for the preventing of it. The other was for the punishment of it, *Gen.* 9. 6. *He that sheddeth mans bloud, by man shall his bloud be shed*; and the reason of this strictness is added in the next words, *For in the image* *The hainousness of the sin.*

of

of God made he man; where you see that this sin is not only an injury to our brother, but even the highest contempt and despite towards God himself, for it is the defacing of his Image, which he hath stamped upon Man. Nay yet further, it is the usurping of God's proper right, and authority. For it is God alone, that hath right to dispose of the life of Man; 'twas he alone that gave it, and it is he alone that hath power to take it away; but he that murders a man, does as it were, wrest this power out of God's hand, which is the highest pitch of rebellious presumption.

The great punishment attending it.

15. And as the sin is great, so likewise is the punishment; we see it frequently very great, and remarkable even in this world, (besides those most fearful effects of it in the next) bloud not only cries, but it cries for vengeance, and the great God of recompences, as he stiles himself, will not fail to hear it: very many examples the Scripture gives us of this: *Ahab* and *Jezebel*, that murthered innocent *Naboth*, for greedines of his Vineyard, were themselves slain, and the Dogs licked their bloud in the place where they had shed his, as you may read in that Story; so *Absalom* that slew his brother *Amnon*, after he had committed that sin, fell into another, that of rebellion against his King and Father, and in it miserably perished. *Rechab* and *Baanah*, that slew *Ishbosheth*, were themselves put to death, and that by the very person they thought to endear by it. Many more instances might be given of this out

of

of the Sacred Story, and many alſo out of Humane, there having been no age but hath yielded multitudes of examples of this kind, ſo that every man may furniſh himſelf out of the obſervations of his own time.

16. And it is worth our notice, what ſtrange and even miraculous means it hath often pleaſed God to uſe for the diſcovery of this ſin; the very brute creatures have often been made inſtruments of it; nay, often the extreme horror of a Man's own conſcience hath made him betray himſelf; ſo that it is not any cloſeneſs a Man uſes in the acting of this ſin, that can ſecure him from the vengeance of it, for he can never ſhut out his own conſcience, that will in ſpight of him be privy to the fact, and that very often proves the means of diſcovering it to the world, or if it ſhould not do that, yet it will ſure act revenge on him, it will be ſuch a Hell within him as will be worſe than death: This we have ſeen in many, who after the commiſſion of this ſin have never been able to enjoy a minutes reſt, but have had that intolerable anguiſh of mind, that they have choſen to be their own murderers rather than live in it. Theſe are the uſual effects of this ſin even in this world, but thoſe in another are yet more dreadful, where ſurely the higheſt degrees of torment belong to this high pitch of wickedneſs: for if, as our Saviour tells us, *Matth.* 5. 22. Hell fire be the portion of him that ſhall but call his brother fool, what degree of thoſe burnings can we think proportionable to this ſo much greater an injury?

The ſtrange diſcoveries of it.

17. The

We must watch diligently against all approaches of this sin.

17. The consideration of all this ought to possess us with the greatest horrour, and abomination of this sin, and to make us extremely watchful of our selves, that we never fall into it, and to that end to prevent all those occasions which may insensibly draw us into this Pit. I mentioned at first several things which are wont to be originals of it, and at those we must begin, if we will surely guard our selves. If therefore thou wilt be sure never to kill a man in thy rage, be sure never to be in that rage, for if thou permittest thy self to that, thou canst have no security against the other, anger being a madness that suffers us not to consider, or know what we do, when it has once possest us. Therefore when thou findest thy self begin to be inflamed, think betimes whither this may lead thee, if thou letteſt look to it, and immediately put the bridle upon this head-strong passion; so again, if thou wilt be sure thy malice shall not draw thee to it, be sure never to harbour one malicious thought in thy heart, for if it once settle there, it will gather such strength, that within a while thou wilt be perfectly under the power of it, so that it may lead thee even to this horrible sin at its pleasure; be therefore careful at the very first approach of this treacherous guest, to shut the doors against it, never to let it enter thy mind; so also if thou wilt be sure thy covetousness, thy ambition, thy lust, or any other sinful desire shall not betray thee to it, be sure thou never permit

permit any of them to bear any ſway with thee, for if they get the dominion as they will ſoon do, if they be once entertained in the heart, they will be paſt thy controul, and hurry thee to this or any other ſin, that may ſerve their ends. In like manner, if thou wouldſt not be guilty of any of the mortal effects of thy neighbours drunkenneſs, be ſure not to entice him to it, nor accompany him at it, and to that purpoſe do not allow thy ſelf in the ſame practice, for if thou do, thou wilt be labouring to get company at it. Laſtly, if thou wilt not be guilty of the murder committed by another, take heed thou never give any incouragement to it, or contribute any thing to that hatred, or contention, that may be the cauſe of it. For when thou haſt either kindled or blowed the fire, what knoweſt thou whom it may conſume? bring always as much water as thou canſt to quench, but never bring one drop of Oyl to encreaſe the flame. The like may be ſaid of all other occaſions of this ſin not here mentioned; and this careful preſerving our ſelves from theſe, is the only ſure way to keep us from this ſin: therefore as ever thou wouldſt keep thy ſelf innocent from the great offence, guard thee warily from all ſuch in-lets, thoſe ſteps and approaches towards it.

Maiming a great injury.

18. But although murder be the greateſt, yet it is not the only injury that may be done to the body of our neighbour; there are others which are alſo of a very high nature; the next in degree to this is Maiming him, depriving

priving him of any member, or at leaſt of the uſe of it, and this is a very great wrong and miſchief to him, as we may diſcern by the judgment of God himſelf, in the caſe of the bond-ſervant, who ſhould by his Maſter's means loſe a member, *Exod.* 21. 16. the freedom of his whole life was thought but a reaſonable recompence for it. *He ſhall let him go free*, ſaith the text, *for his eye*; nay, though it were a leſs conſiderable part, if it were but a tooth, which of all others may be loſt with the leaſt damage, yet the ſame amends was to be made him, verſe 27.

That which every man dreads for himſelf.

19. But we need no other way of meaſuring this injury, than the judgment of every man in his own caſe; how much does every man dread the loſs of a limb? So that if he be by any accident or diſeaſe, in danger of it, he thinks no pains or coſt too much to preſerve it. And then how great an injuſtice, how contrary to that great rule of *doing as we would be done to*, is it for a Man to do that to another, which he ſo unwillingly ſuffers himſelf?

Yet worſe if the man be poor.

But if the perſon be poor, one that muſt labour for his living, the injury is yet greater, it is ſuch as may in effect amount to the former ſin of murder; for as the Wiſe man ſays, *Eccluſ.* 24. 21. *The poor mans bread is his life, and he that deprives them thereof is a bloud-ſhedder.* And therefore he that deprives him of the means of getting his bread, by diſabling him from labour, is ſurely no leſs guilty. In the Law it was permit-

ted

ted to every man that had ſuſtained ſuch a damage by his neighbour, to require the Magiſtrate to inflict the like on him, *eye for eye, tooth for tooth*, as it is, *Exod.* 21. 24.

Neceſſity of making what ſatisfaction we can.

20. And though unprofitable revenge be not now allowed to us Chriſtians, yet ſure it is the part of every one who hath done this injury, to make what ſatisfaction lies in his power; 'tis true he cannot reſtore a limb again (which by the way ſhould make Men wary how they do thoſe miſchiefs which it is ſo impoſſible for them to repair) but yet he may ſatisfie for ſome of the ill effects of that loſs. If that have brought the Man to want and penury, he may, nay he muſt, if he have but the leaſt ability, relieve and ſupport him, yea, though it be by his own extraordinary labour: for if it be a duty of us all to be eyes to the blind, and feet to the lame, as *Job* ſpeaks, much more muſt we be ſo to them whom our ſelves have made blind and lame. Therefore whoever hath done this injury to any of his poor brethren, let him know he is bound to do all that is poſſible towards the repairing of it, if he do not, every new ſuffering that the poor mans wants bring upon him, becomes a new charge and accuſation againſt him, at the tribunal of the juſt Judge.

Wounds and ſtripes injuries alſo.

21. There are yet other degrees of injury to the body of our neighbour. I ſhall mention only two more, Wounds and ſtripes; a Man may wound another,

which

which though it finally cause loss neither of life nor limb, is yet an endangering of both; and the like may be said of stripes; both of which however are very painful at the present, nay, perhaps very long after; and pain, of all temporal evils, is to be accounted the greatest, for it is not only an evil in it self, but it is such an one, that permits us not, whilst we are under it, to enjoy any other good: a Man in pain having no taste of any the greatest delights; If any Man despise these, as light injuries, let him again ask himself, how he would like it, to have his own body slasht or bruised, and put to pass under those painful means of cure, which are many times necessary in such cases? I presume there is no man would willingly undergo this from another, and why then shouldest thou offer it to him?

This cruelty to others the effect of pride.

2. The truth is, this strange cruelty to others is the effect of a great pride, and haughtiness of heart: we look upon others with such contempt, that we think it no matter how they are used; we think they must bear blows from us when in the mean time we are so tender of our selves, that we cannot hear the least word of disparagement, but we are all on a flame. The provocations to these injuries are commonly so slight, that did not this inward pride dispose us to such an angriness of humour, that we take fire at every thing, it were impossible we should be moved by them. Nay, some are advanced to such a wantonness of cruelty, that without any provocation

vocation at all, in cool bloud, as they ſay, they can thus wrong their poor brethren, and make it part of their paſtime and recreation to cauſe pain to others. Thus ſome tyrannous humours take ſuch a pleaſure in tormenting thoſe under their power, that they are glad when they can but find a pretence to puniſh them, and then do it without all moderation: and others will ſet men together by the ears, only that they may have the ſport of ſeeing the ſcuffle; like the old *Romans*, that made it one of their publick ſports to ſee Men kill one another; and ſure we have as little Chriſtianity as they, if we can take delight in ſuch ſpectacles.

23. This ſavageneſs and cruelty of mind is ſo unbecoming the nature of a Man, that he is not allowed to uſe it even to his beaſt; how intolerable is it then towards thoſe, that are of the ſame nature, and which is more, are heirs of the ſame eternal hopes with us? They that ſhall thus tranſgreſs againſt their neighbours in any of the foregoing particulars, or whatever elſe is hurtful to the body, are unjuſt perſons, want even this loweſt ſort of juſtice, the negative to their neighbours in reſpect of their bodies.

24. Neither can any Man excuſe himſelf by ſaying what he has done was only in return of ſome injury offered him by the other; for ſuppoſe it be ſo, that he have indeed received ſome conſiderable wrong, yet cannot he be his own revenger without injury to that Man, who is not, by being thine enemy, become thy vaſſal, or ſlave, to do with him what thou liſt; thou haſt never the more right of dominion over him, becauſe

becauſe he hath done thee wrong, and therefore if thou hadſt no power over his body before, 'tis certain thou haſt none now, and therefore thou art not only uncharitable (which yet were ſin enough to damn thee) but unjuſt in every act of violence thou doſt to him. Nay, this injuſtice aſcends higher, even to God himſelf, who hath reſerved vengeance as his own peculiar right, *Vengeance is mine, I will repay, ſaith the Lord*, Rom. 12. 19. and then he that will act revenge for himſelf, what does he, but incroach upon this ſpecial right and prerogative of God, ſnatch the ſword, as it were, out of his hand, as if he knew better how to wield it? Which is at once a robbery and contempt of the Divine Majeſty.

SUNDAY XI.

Of Juſtice about the Poſſeſſions of our Neighbour; againſt injuring him, as concerning his Wife, his Goods. Of Oppreſſion. Theft. Of paying of Debts, &c.

His Poſſeſſions.

Sect. 1. THE third part of Negative Juſtice concerns the Poſſeſſions of our Neighbours; what I mean by Poſſeſſions, I cannot better explain than by referring you to the

the Tenth Commandment, the end of which is to bridle all covetous appetites and desires towards the Possessions of our neighbour. There we find reckoned up, not only his house, servants and cattel, which may all pass under the one general name of his goods or riches, but particularly his Wife, as a principal part of his possessions, and therefore when we consider this duty of negative justice, in respect of the possessions of our neighbour, we must apply it to both, his wife as well as his goods.

His Wife.

2. The especial and peculiar right that every Man hath in his Wife is so well known, that it were vain to say any thing in proof of it; the great impatience that every husband hath to have this right of his invaded, shews that it is sufficiently understood in the World, and therefore none that does this injury to another, can be ignorant of the greatness of it. The corrupting of a Man's Wife, enticing her to a strange bed, is by all acknowledged to be the worst sort of theft, infinitely beyond that of the goods.

The enticing a mans wife the greatest injustice.

3. Indeed there is in this one, a heap of the greatest injustices together, some towards the Woman, and some towards the Man: towards the Woman there are the greatest imaginable; it is that injustice to her soul, which was before mentioned as the highest of all others, 'tis the robbing her of her innocency, and setting her in a course of the horridst wicked-

To the woman.

neſs (no leſs than luſt and perjury together) from which it is probable ſhe may never return, and then it proves the damning of her eternally. Next it is in reſpect of this World the robbing her of her credit, making her abhorred and deſpiſed, and her very name a reproach among all Men; and beſides, it is the depriving her of all that happineſs of life, which ariſes from the mutual kindneſs and affection that is between Man and Wife. Inſtead whereof this brings in a loathing and abhorring of each other, from whence flow multitudes of miſchiefs, too many to rehearſe, in all which the Man hath his ſhare alſo.

To the man.

4. But beſides thoſe, there are to him many and high injuſtices; for it is firſt the robbing him of that, which of all other things he accounts moſt precious, the love and faithfulneſs of his Wife, and that alſo wherein he hath ſuch an incommunicable right, that himſelf cannot, if he would, make it over to any other; and therefore ſure it cannot without the utmoſt injuſtice be torn from him by any. Nor is this all, but it is farther the ingulfing him (if ever he come to diſcern it) in that moſt tormenting paſſion of jealouſie, which is of all others the moſt painful, and which oft puts Men upon the moſt deſperate attempts, it being as *Solomon* ſays, *Prov. 6.* 34. *The rage of a man.* It is yet farther, the bringing upon him all that ſcorn and contempt which by the unjuſt meaſures of the World falls on them, which are ſo abuſed, and which is by many eſteemed the moſt inſufferable part of the wrong; and though it be true, that it is very unjuſt he ſhould fall under

under reproach, only becauſe he is injured, yet unleſs the World could be new moulded, it will certainly be his lot, and therefore it adds much to the injury. Again this may indeed be a robbery in the uſual ſence of the word, for perhaps it may be the thruſting in the child of the Adulterer into his family, to ſhare both in the maintenance and portions of his own children; and this is an errand theft: firſt, in reſpect of the man, who ſurely intends not the providing for another Mans child; and then in reſpect of the children, who are by that means defrauded of ſo much as that goes away with. And therefore whoſoever hath this circumſtance of the ſin to repent of, cannot do it effectually, without reſtoring to the family, as much as he hath by this means robb'd it of.

The moſt irreparable.

5. All this put together will ſure make this the greateſt and moſt provoking injury that can be done to a man, and (which heightens it yet more) it is that, for which a Man can never make reparations, for unleſs it be in the circumſtance before mentioned, there is no part of this ſin, wherein that can be done; to this purpoſe it is obſervable in the Jewiſh Law, that the Thief was appointed to reſtore fourfold, and that freed him; but the Adulterer having no poſſibility of making any reſtitution, any ſatisfaction, he muſt pay his life for his offence, *Lev.* 20. 10. And though now adays adulterers ſpeed better, live many days to renew their guilt, and perhaps to laugh at thoſe, whom they have thus injured, yet let them be

aſſured, there muſt one day be a ſad reckoning, and that whether they repent or not; If by God's grace they do come to repentance, they will then find this to be no cheap ſin, many anguiſhes of ſoul, terrors and perplexities of conſcience, groans and tears it muſt coſt them; and indeed were a Man's whole life ſpent in theſe penitential exerciſes, 'twere little enough to wipe off the guilt of any one ſingle act of this kind; what overwhelming ſorrows then are requiſite for ſuch a trade of this ſin, as too many drive? Certainly it is ſo great a task that it is highly neceſſary for all that are ſo concerned, to ſet to it immediately, leſt they want time to go through with it; for let no Man flatter himſelf, that the guilt of a courſe and habit of ſuch a ſin can be waſht away with a ſingle act of repentance, no, he muſt proportion the repentance to the fault, and as one hath been a habit and courſe, ſo muſt the other alſo. And then how ſtrange a madneſs is it for Men to run into this ſin, (and that with ſuch painful purſuits, as many do) which he knows muſt at the beſt hand, that is, ſuppoſing he do repent of it, coſt him thus dear? But then if he do not repent, infinitely dearer? it loſes him all his title to Heaven, that place of purity, and gives him his portion in the lake of fire, where the burnings of his luſt ſhall end in thoſe everlaſting burnings; For how cloſely ſoever he hath acted this ſin, be it ſo that he may have ſaid with the adulterer in *Job* 25. 15. *No eye ſeeth me*, yet 'tis ſure he could not in the greateſt obſcurity ſhelter himſelf from God's ſight, with whom *the darkneſs is no darkneſs*,

Pſalm

Pſalm 139. 12. And he it is, who hath expreſly threatned to judge this ſort of offenders, *Heb.* 13. 4. *Adulterers God will judge.* God grant that all that live in this foul guilt, may ſo ſeaſonably, and ſo throughly judge themſelves, that they may prevent that ſevere and dreadful judgment of his.

6. The ſecond thing to which this Negative juſtice to our Neighbours poſſeſſions reacheth, is his Goods, under which general word is contained all thoſe ſeveral ſorts of things, as Houſe, Land, Cattle, Money, and the like, in which he hath a right and property; theſe we are by the rule of this juſtice to ſuffer him to enjoy without ſeeking, either to work him damage in any of them, or to get any of them to our ſelves: I make a difference between theſe two, becauſe there may be two ſeveral grounds or motives of this injuſtice; the one malice, the other covetouſneſs. *His goods.*

7. The malicious Man deſires to work his Neighbours miſchief, though he get nothing by it himſelf: 'tis frequently ſeen that Men will make havock and ſpoil of the goods of one, to whom they bear a grudge, though they never deſign to get any thing to themſelves by it, but only the pleaſure of doing a ſpight to the other. This is a moſt helliſh humour, directly anſwerable to that of the Devil, who beſtows all his pains and induſtry, not to bring in any good to himſelf, but only to ruine and undo others; and how contrary it is to all rules of juſtice, you *Malicious injuſtice.*

may see by the Precept given by God to the Jews concerning the goods of an enemy; where they were so far from being allowed a liberty of spoil and destruction, that they are expressly bound to prevent it, *Exod.* 23. 4, 5. *If thou meet thine enemies Oxe, or his Ass going a-stray, thou shalt surely bring it back to him again: If thou see the Ass of him that hateth thee lying under his burden, and wouldst forbear to help him, thou shalt surely help with him:* Where you see it is a debt we owe to our very enemies, to prevent that loss and damage, which by any accident he is in danger of: and that even with some labour, and pains to our selves. How horrible an injustice is it then, purposely to bring that loss and damage on him? Whoever is guilty of this, let him never excuse himself by saying, he hath not enricht himself by the spoil of his neighbour, that he hath nothing of it cleaves to his finger, for sure this malicious injustice is no less a fault than the covetous one; nay, I suppose in respect of the principle and cause, from which it flows, it may be greater, this hatred of another being worse than the immoderate love of our selves; whoever hath thus mischieft his neighbour, he is as much bound to repair the injury, to make satisfaction for the loss, as if he had enriched himself by it.

Covetous injustice.

8. But on the other side, let not the covetous defrauder therefore judge his sin light, because there is another, that in some one respect out-weighs it, for perhaps in others his may cast the scales; certainly it does in this one, that he

he that is unjuſt for greedineſs of gain, is like to multiply more acts of this ſin, than he that is ſo out of malice; for 'tis impoſſible any Man ſhould have ſo many objects of his malice, as he may have of his covetouſneſs; there is no Man at ſo general a defiance with all Mankind that he hates every body; but the covetous Man hath as many objects of his vice, as there be things in the World he counts valuable. But I ſhall not longer ſtand upon this compariſon, 'tis ſure they are both great and crying ſins, and that is ground enough of abhorring each, let us deſcend now to the ſeveral branches of this ſort of Covetous injuſtice; 'tis true they may all bear the name of robbery, or theft, for in effect they are all ſo, yet for methods-ſake it will not be amiſs to diſtinguiſh them into theſe three; Oppreſſion, Theft, and Deceit.

9. By Oppreſſion, I mean that open and bare-faced robbery of ſeizing upon the poſſeſſions of others, and owning and avowing the doing ſo. For the doing of this there are ſeveral inſtruments; as firſt, that of power, by which many Nations and Princes have been turned out of their rights, and many private Men out of their eſtates: Sometimes again, Law is made the inſtrument of it; he that covets his Neighbours Lands or Goods, pretends a claim to them, and then by corrupting of Juſtice, by Bribes and gifts, or elſe over-ruling it by greatneſs and authority, gets judgment on his ſide: this is a high oppreſſion, and of the worſt ſort, thus to make the Law, which was intended for the protection *Oppreſſion.*

and defence of mens Rights, to be the means of overthrowing them; and it is a very heavy guilt, that lies both on him that procures, and on him that pronounces such a sentence, yea, and on the Lawyer too, that pleads such a cause, for by so doing he assists in the oppression. Sometimes again, the very necessities of the oppressed are the means of his oppression; thus it is in the case of Extortion, and griping Usury: a Man is in extreme want of Money, and this gives opportunity to the Extortioner to wrest unconscionably from him, to which the poor man is forced to yield, to supply his present wants. And thus also it is often with exacting Landlords, who, when their poor Tenants know not how to provide themselves elsewhere, rack and skrew them beyond the worth of the thing. All these and many the like are but several ways of acting this one sin of Oppression, which becomes yet the more hainous, by how much the more helpless the person is that is thus oppressed, therefore the oppression of the Widow and Fatherless, is in Scripture mentioned as the height of this sin.

Gods vengeance against it.

10. It is indeed a most crying guilt, and that against which God hath threatned his heavy vengeance, as we read in divers Texts of Scripture; thus it is, *Ezek.* 18. 12. *He that hath oppressed the poor,* and hath spoiled by violence, he shall surely dye, *his bloud shall be upon him*; and the same sentence is repeated against him, *verse* 18. Indeed God hath so peculiarly taken upon him the protection of

of the poor and oppreſſed, that he is engaged as it were in honour to be their avenger, and accordingly *Pſalm* 12. we ſee God ſolemnly declare his reſolution of appearing for them, Verſe 5. *For the oppreſſion of the poor, for the ſighing of the needy, now will I ariſe, ſaith the Lord, I will ſet him in ſafety from him.* The advice therefore of *Solomon* is excellent, *Prov* 22. 22. *Rob not the poor, becauſe he is poor; neither oppreſs the afflicted in the gate, for the Lord will plead their cauſe, and will ſpoil the ſoul of thoſe that ſpoiled them*; they are like in the end to have little joy of the booty it brings them in, when it thus engages God againſt them.

11. The ſecond ſort of this injuſtice is Theft, and of that alſo there are two kinds, the one the withholding what we ſhould pay, and the other taking from our neighbour what is already in his poſſeſſion. *Theft.*

12. Of the firſt ſort is the not paying of debts, whether ſuch as we have borrowed, or ſuch as by our own voluntary promiſe are become our debts, for they are equally due to him that can lay either of theſe claims to them; and therefore the withholding of either of them is a theft, a keeping from my neighbour that which is his; yet the former of them is rather the more injurious, for by that I take from him that which he once actually had (be it money or whatever elſe) and ſo make him worſe than I found him. This is a very great, and very common injuſtice. Men can now adays with as great confidence deny him *Not paying what we borrow.*

that asks a debt, as they do him that asks an alms; nay, many times 'tis made matter of quarrel for a Man to demand his own: beſides the many attendances the Creditor is put to in purſuit of it, are a yet farther injury to him by waſting his time, and taking him off from other buſineſs, and ſo he is made a loſer that way too. This is ſo great injuſtice, that I ſee not how a Man can look upon any thing he poſſeſſes as his own right, whileſt he thus denies another his. It is the duty of every Man in debt, rather to ſtrip himſelf of all, and caſt himſelf again naked upon God's providence, than thus to feather his neſt with the ſpoils of his neighbours. And ſurely it would prove the more thriving courſe, not only in reſpect of the bleſſing, which may be expected upon juſtice, compared with the curſe that attends the contrary, but even in worldly prudence alſo; for he that defers paying of debts, will at laſt be forc'd to it by Law, and that upon much worſe terms than he might have done it voluntarily, with a greater charge, and with ſuch a loſs of his credit, that afterward in his greateſt neceſſities he will not know where to borrow. But the ſure way for a Man to ſecure himſelf from the guilt of this injuſtice, is never to borrow more than he knows he hath means to repay, unleſs it be of one, who knowing his diſability, is willing to run the hazard. Otherwiſe he commits this ſin at the very time of borrowing; for he takes that from his neighbour upon promiſe of paying, which he knows he is never likely to reſtore to him, which is a flat robbery.

The

What we are bound for.

The ſame juſtice which ties Men to pay their own debts, ties alſo every ſurety to pay thoſe debts of others for which he ſtands bound, in caſe the principal either cannot or will not: for by being bound, he hath made it his own debt, and muſt in all juſtice anſwer it to the creditor, who, it's preſumed, was drawn to lend on confidence of his ſecurity, and therefore is directly cheated and betrayed by him, if he ſee him not ſatisfied. If it be thought hard, that a Man ſhould pay for that which he never received benefit by; I ſhall yield it, ſo far as to be juſt matter of wariness to every Man how he enter into ſuch engagements, but it can never be made an excuſe for the breaking them.

What we have promiſed.

As for the other ſort of debt, that which is brought upon a Man by his own voluntary promiſe, that alſo cannot without great injuſtice be withholden; for it is now the Man's right, and then 'tis no matter, by what means it came to be ſo. Therefore we ſee *David* makes it part of the deſcription of a juſt Man, *Pſalm* 15. 4. that he keeps his promiſes, yea, *though they were made to his own diſadvantage*: and ſurely, he is utterly unfit to aſcend to that holy Hill, there ſpoken of, either as that ſignifies the Church here, or Heaven hereafter, that does not punctually obſerve this part of juſtice. To this ſort of debt may be reduced the wages of the ſervant, the hire of the labourer; and the withholding of theſe is a great ſin, and the complaints of thoſe that are thus injured, aſcend up

to

to God. *Behold* (ſaith S. *James*) *the hire of the labourers which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth, and the cries of them that have reaped, are entred into the ear of the Lord of Sabbaoth.* *Deut.* 24. 14, 15. we find a ſtrict command in this matter, *Thou ſhalt not oppreſs a hired ſervant that is poor and needy, at his day thou ſhalt give him his hire, neither ſhall the Sun go down upon it, for he is poor, and ſetteth his heart upon it, leſt he cry againſt thee to the Lord, and it be ſin unto thee.* This is one of thoſe loud clamorous ſins which will not ceaſe crying, till it bring down God's vengeance; and therefore though thou haſt no juſtice to thy poor brother, yet have at leaſt ſo much mercy to thy ſelf, as not to pull down judgments on thee by thus wronging him.

SUNDAY XII.

Of Theft; Stealing; of deceit in Truſt, in Traffick; of Reſtitution, &c.

Stealing the goods of our neighbour.

Sect. 1. THE ſecond part of Theft, is the taking from our Neighbour that which is already in his poſſeſſion: and this may be done either more violently, and openly, or elſe more cloſely and ſliely; the firſt is the manner of thoſe that rob on the way, or plunder

plunder houſes, where by force they take the goods of their neighbour; the other is the way of the pilfering thief, that takes away a Man's goods unknown to him; I ſhall not diſpute, which of theſe is the worſt, 'tis enough that they are both ſuch acts of injuſtice, as make Men odious to God, unfit for humane ſociety, and betray the actors to the greateſt miſchiefs even in this World, death it ſelf being by Law appointed the reward of it; and there are few that follow this trade long, but at laſt meet with that fruit of it. I am ſure 'tis madneſs for any to believe he ſhall always ſteal ſecurely, for he is to contend with the induſtry of all thoſe whom he ſhall thus injure, whoſe loſſes will quicken their wits for the finding him out, and which is infinitely more, he is to ſtruggle with the juſtice of God, which doth uſually purſue ſuch Men to deſtruction, even in this World; witneſs the many ſtrange diſcoveries that have been made of the craftieſt thieves. But however, If he were ſecure from the vengeance here, I am ſure nothing but repentance and reformation can ſecure him from the vengeance of it hereafter. And now when theſe dangers are weighed, 'twill ſure appear, that the thief makes a pitiful bargain, he ſteals his neighbours money or cattle, and in exchange for it he muſt pay his life or his ſoul, perhaps both; and if *the whole world be too mean a price for a ſoul*, as he tells us, *Mark* 8. 36. who beſt knew the value of them, having himſelf bought them, what a ſtrange madneſs is it, to barter them away for every petty trifle, as many do, who have got ſuch a habit

habit of ſtealing, that not the meaneſt worthleſs thing can eſcape their fingers? Under this head of Theft may be ranked the receivers of ſtoln goods, whether thoſe that take them, as partners in the theft, or thoſe that buy them, when they know or believe they are ſtoln. This many, (that pretend much to abhor theft) are guilty of, when they can by it buy the thing a little cheaper than the common rate. And here alſo comes in the concealing of any goods a Man finds of his neighbours, which whoſoever reſtores not, if he know, or can learn out the owner, is no better than a thief; for he withholds from his neighbour that which properly belongs to him: and ſure 'twill not be uncharitable to ſay, that he that will do this, would likewiſe commit the groſſer theft, were he by that no more in danger of Law than in this he is.

Deceit. The third part of injuſtice is Deceit, and in that there may be as many acts as there are occaſions of entercourſe and dealing between man and man.

2. It were impoſſible to name them all, but I think they will be contained under theſe two general deceits, in matters of Truſt, and in matters of Traffick, or bargaining; unleſs it be that of Gaming, which therefore here by the way, I muſt tell you, is as much a fraud and deceit as any of the reſt.

In Truſt. 3. He that deceives a Man in any Truſt that is committed to him, is guilty of a great injuſtice, and that the moſt treacherous ſort of one, it is the joyning of two great ſins in one, defrauding, and promiſe-

promiſe-breaking; for in all truſts there is a promiſe implied, if not expreſt; for the very accepting of the truſt contains under it a promiſe of fidelity; theſe truſts are broken ſometimes to the living, ſometimes to the dead; to the living there are many ways of doing it, according to the ſeveral kinds of the truſt; ſometimes a truſt is more general, like that of *Potiphar* to *Joſeph*, Gen. 39. 4. a Man commits to another all that he hath, and thus Guardians of Children, and ſometimes Stewards are intruſted; ſometimes again it is more limited, and reſtrained to ſome one ſpecial thing; a Man intruſts another to bargain or deal for him in ſuch a particular, or he puts ſome one thing into his hands, to manage and diſpoſe: thus among ſervants it is uſual for one to be intruſted with one part of the Maſters goods, and another with another part of them. Now in all theſe, and the like caſes, whoſoever acts not for him that intruſts him, with the ſame faithfulneſs, that he would for himſelf, but ſhall either careleſly loſe, or prodigally imbezle the things committed to him, or elſe convert them to his own uſe, he is guilty of this great ſin of betraying a truſt to the living. In like manner he that being intruſted with the execution of a dead Man's Teſtament, acts not according to the known intention of the dead man, but enriches himſelf by what is aſſigned to others, he is guilty of this ſin, in reſpect of the dead, which is ſo much the greater, by how much the dead hath no means of remedy and redreſs, as the living may have. It is a kind of robbing of graves, which is a theft of which men natu-

naturally have ſuch a horrour, that he muſt be a very hardned Thief, that can attempt it. But either of theſe frauds are made yet more hainous, when either God, or the poor are immediately concern'd in it, that is, when any thing is committed to a Man, for the uſes either of piety, or charity; this adds ſacriledge to both the fraud and the treachery, and ſo gives him title to all thoſe curſes that attend thoſe ſeveral ſins, which are ſo heavy, that he that for the preſent gain will adventure on them, makes as ill, nay, a much worſe bargain than *Gehazi*, 2 Kings 5. 27. who *by getting the raiment of* Naaman *got his leproſie too.*

In Traffick.

4. The ſecond ſort of fraud is in matters of traffick and bargain, wherein there may be deceit both in the ſeller and buyer; that of the ſeller is commonly either in concealing the faults of the commodity, or elſe in over-rating it.

The ſellers concealing the faults of his ware.

5. The ways of concealing its faults are ordinarily theſe, either firſt by denying that it hath any ſuch fault, nay, perhaps commending it for the direct contrary quality, and this is down-right lying, and ſo adds that ſin to the other, and if that lye be confirmed by an oath, as it is too uſually, then the yet greater guilt of perjury comes in alſo; and then what a heap of ſins is here gathered together? Abundantly enough to ſink a poor ſoul to deſtruction, and all this only to skrew a little more money out of his neighbours pocket, and that ſometimes ſo very

very little, that 'tis a miracle that any Man that thinks he has a Soul, can ſet it at ſo miſerable a contemptible price. A ſecond means of concealing is by uſing ſome Art to the thing, to make it look fair, and to hide the faults of it, and this is acting a lye, though it be not ſpeaking one, which amounts to the ſame thing, and has ſurely in this caſe as much of the intention of cheating and defrauding, as the moſt impudent forſwearing can have. A third means, is the picking out ignorant Chapmen; This is, I believe, an Art too well known among Tradeſmen, who will not bring out their faulty wares to Men of skill, but keep them to put off to ſuch, whoſe unskilfulneſs may make them paſſable with them: and this is ſtill the ſame deceit with the former; for it all tends to the ſame end, the couzening and defrauding of the Chapman, and then it is not much odds, whether I make uſe of my own Art, or his weakneſs for the purpoſe. This is certain, he that will do juſtly, muſt let his Chapman know what he buys; and if his own skill enable him not to judge, (nay if he do not actually find out the fault) thou art bound to tell it him, otherwiſe thou makeſt him pay for ſomewhat which is not there, he preſuming there is that good quality in it, which thou knoweſt is not; and therefore thou mayeſt as honeſtly take his Money for ſome goods of another mans, which thou knoweſt thou canſt never put into his poſſeſſion, which I ſuppoſe no Man will deny to be an arrant cheat. To this head of concealment may be referred that deceit of falſe weights and meaſures, for that is the concealing

from

from the buyer a defect in the quantity, as the other was in the quality of the commodity, and is again the making him pay for what he hath not. This sort of fraud is pointed at particularly by *Solomon*, *Prov.* 11. 1. with this note upon it, that *it is an abomination to the Lord.*

His over-rating it.

6. The second part of fraud in the Seller, lies in over-rating the commodity; though he have not disguised, or concealed the faults of it, and so have dealt fairly in that respect, yet if he set an unreasonable price upon it, he defrauds the buyer: I call that an unreasonable price, which exceeds the true worth of the thing, considered with those moderate gains, which all Tradesmen are presumed to be allowed in the Sale: Whatever is beyond this must in all likelihood be fetch in by some of these ways: As first, by taking advantage of the buyers ignorance in the value of the thing, which is the same with doing it in the goodness, which hath already been shewed to be a deceit; or secondly, by taking advantage of his necessity: Thou findest a Man hath present and urgent need of such a thing, and therefore takest this opportunity to set the Dice upon him; but this is that very sin of Extortion, and Oppression spoken of before, for it is sure, nothing can justly raise the price of any thing, but either its becoming dearer to thee, or its being some way better in it self; but the necessity of thy brother causes neither of these; his nakedness doth not make the cloaths thou sellest him stand thee in ever the more, neither doth it make them any way bet-

ter;

ter; and therefore to rate them ever the higher is to change the way of trading, and ſell even the wants and neceſſities of thy Neighbour, which ſure is a very unlawful vocation. Or thirdly, it may be by taking advantage of the indiſcretion of the Chapman. A man perhaps earneſtly fancies ſuch a thing, and then ſuffers that fancy ſo to over-rule his reaſon, that he reſolves to have it upon any terms. If thou findeſt this in him, and thereupon raiſeſt thy rate, this is to make him buy his folly, which is of all others the deareſt purchaſe; 'tis ſure his fancy adds nothing to the real value, no more than his neceſſity did in the former caſe, and therefore ſhould not add to the price. He therefore that will deal juſtly in the buſineſs of ſelling muſt not catch at all advantages, which the temper of his Chapman may give, but conſider ſoberly, what the thing is worth, and what he would afford it for to another, of whom he had no ſuch advantage, and accordingly rate it to him at no higher a price.

Fraud in the Buyer.

7. On the Buyers part there are not ordinarily ſo many opportunities of Fraud; yet it is poſſible a Man may ſometimes happen to ſell ſomewhat, the worth whereof he is not acquainted with, and then it will be as unjuſt for the buyer to make gain by his ignorance, as in the other caſe it was for the ſeller: but that which often falls out, is the caſe of neceſſity, which may as probably fall on the ſellers ſide, as the buyers: A man's wants compel him to ſell, and permit him not to ſtay to make the beſt bargain,

bargain, but force him to take the first offer, and here for the buyer to grate upon him, because he sees him in that strait, is the same fault which I before shewed it to be in the seller.

Many temptations to deceit in Traffick.

8. In this whole business of Traffick there are so many opportunities of deceit, that a Man had need fence himself with a very firm resolution, nay, love of justice, or he will be in danger to fall under temptation; for as the Wise man speaks, *Eccles.* 27. 2. *As a nail sticks fast between the joynings of the Stones*, so doth sin stick close between buying and selling; it is so interwoven with all Trades, so mixt with the very first principles and grounds of them, that it is taught together with them, and so becomes part of the Art; so that he is now adays scarce thought fit to manage a Trade, that wants it, while he that hath most of this black Art of defrauding, applauds and hugs himself, nay, perhaps boasts to others, how he hath over-reacht his Neighbour.

The commonness of injustice a reproach to Christianity.

What an intolerable shame is this, that we Christians, who are by the precepts of our Master set to those higher duties of Charity, should instead of practising them, quite unlearn those common rules of justice, which mere nature teaches? For, I think, I may say, there are none of those several branches of injustice towards the possessions of our Neighbour, which would not be adjudged to be so by any sober

ſober Heathen; ſo that, as S. *Paul* tells thoſe of the Circumciſion, that the Name of God *was blaſphemed among the Gentiles*, by that unagreeableneſs that was betwixt their practice, and their Law, *Rom.* 2. 24. ſo now may it be ſaid of us, that the *Name of Chriſt is blaſphemed among the Turks and Heathens*, by the vile and ſcandalous lives of us who call our ſelves Chriſtians, and particularly in this ſin of injuſtice; for ſhame let us at laſt endeavour to wipe off this reproach from our profeſſion, by leaving theſe practices; to which methinks this one ſingle conſideration ſhould be enough to perſwade us.

It is not the way to enrich a man.

9. Yet beſides this, there want not other; among which, one there is of ſuch a nature, as may prevail with the arranteſt worldling, and that is, that this courſe doth not really tend to the enriching of him; there is a ſecret curſe goes along with it, which like a Canker eats out all the benefit was expected from it. This no man can doubt that believes the Scripture, where there are multitudes of Texts to this purpoſe: thus *Prov.* 22. 16. *He that oppreſſeth the poor to encreaſe his riches, ſhall ſurely come to want.* So Habak. 2. 6. *Wo to him that encreaſeth that which is not his! how long? And he that ladeth himſelf with thick Clay: ſhall they not riſe up ſuddenly that ſhall bite thee; and awake that ſhall vex thee? And thou ſhalt be for booties to them.* This is commonly the fortune of thoſe that ſpoil and deceive others, they at laſt meet with ſome that do the like to them. But the place in *Zachary* is moſt full to this purpoſe,

Chap.

Chap. 5. where under the ſign of a flying roll is ſignified the curſe that goes forth againſt this ſin, Verſe 4. *I will bring it forth, ſaith the Lord of Hoſts, and it ſhall enter into the houſe of the Thief, and into the houſe of him that ſweareth falſely by my Name, and it ſhall conſume it with the timber thereof, and with the ſtones thereof.* Where you ſee, theft and perjury are the two ſins, againſt which this curſe is aimed (and they too often go together in the matter of defrauding) and the nature of this curſe is, to conſume the houſe, to make an utter deſtruction of all that belongs to him that is guilty of either of theſe ſins. Thus whilſt thou art ravening after thy neighbours goods, or houſe, thou art but gathering fuel to burn thine own. And the effect of theſe threatnings of God we daily ſee in the ſtrange improſperouſneſs of ill gotten eſtates, which every Man is apt enough to obſerve in other Mens caſes: he that ſees his neighbour decline in his eſtate, can preſently call to mind, This was gotten by oppreſſion or deceit; yet ſo ſottiſh are we, ſo bewitcht with the love of gain, that he that makes this obſervation, can ſeldom turn it to his own uſe, is nevertheleſs greedy, or unjuſt himſelf for that vengeance he diſcerns upon others.

It ruines the Soul eternally.

10. But alas! if thou couldeſt be ſure that thy unjuſt poſſeſſions ſhould not be torn from thee, yet when thou remembreſt, how dear thou muſt pay for them in another World, thou haſt little reaſon to brag of thy prize. Thou thinkeſt thou haſt been very cunning, when thou haſt over-reacht thy brother;

ther; But God knows all the while there is another over-reaching thee, and cheating thee of what is infinitely more precious, even thy Soul: the Devil herein deals with thee as Fiſhers uſe to do; thoſe that will catch a great fiſh, will bait the hook with a leſs, and ſo the great one coming with greedineſs to devour that, is himſelf taken: So thou that art gaping to ſwallow up thy poor brother, art thy ſelf made a prey to that great devourer. And alas! what will it eaſe thee in Hell that thou haſt left wealth behind thee upon Earth, when thou ſhalt there want that, which the meaneſt beggar here enjoys, even a drop of water to cool thy tongue? Conſider this, and from henceforth reſolve to imploy all that pains and diligence thou haſt uſed to deceive others, in reſcuing thy ſelf from the frauds of the grand deceiver.

The neceſſity of Reſtitution.

11. To this purpoſe it is abſolutely neceſſary, that thou make Reſtitution to all whom thou haſt wronged: For as long as thou keepeſt any thing of the unjuſt gain, 'tis as it were an earneſt-penny from the Devil which gives him full right to thy Soul. But perhaps it may be ſaid, It will not in all caſes be poſſible to make reſtitution to the wronged party, peradventure he may be dead; in that caſe then make it to his Heirs, to whom his right deſcends. But it may further be objected, that he that hath long gone on in a courſe of fraud, may have injured many, that he cannot now remember, and many, that he has no means of finding out: in this caſe all I can adviſe

vice is this: First, to be as diligent as is possible both in recalling to mind who they were, and endeavouring to find them out: and when, after all thy care, that proves impossible, let thy Restitutions be made to the poor; and that they may not be made by halves, be as careful as thou canst to reckon every the least mite of unjust gain: but when that cannot exactly be done, as 'tis sure it cannot by those who have multiplied the Acts of fraud, yet even there let them make some general measures, whereby to proportion their restitution: As for example, a Tradesman that cannot remember how much he hath cheated in every single parcel, yet may possibly guess in the gross whether he have usually over-reacht to the value of a third, or a fourth part of the wares, and then what proportion soever he thinks he has so defrauded, the same proportion let him now give out of that estate he hath raised by his Trade: but herein it concerns every Man to deal uprightly, as in the presence of God, and not to make advantage of his own forgetfulness, to the cutting short of the Restitution, but rather go on the other hand, and be sure rather to give too much, than too little. If he do happen to give somewhat over, he need not grudge the charge of such a sin-offering, and 'tis sure he will not, if he do heartily desire an atonement. Many other difficulties there may be in this business of restitution, which will not be foreseen, and so cannot now be particularly spoke to; but the more of those there are, the greater horror ought Men to have of running into the sin of injustice, which it will be so difficult,

ble, if not impossible for them to repair, and the more careful ought they to be to mortifie that which is the root of all injustice, to wit, Covetousness.

SUNDAY XIII.

Of false Reports, False witness, Slanders, Whisperings; Of scoffing for Infirmities, Calamities, Sins, &c. Of Positive Justice, Truth, Of Lying. Of Envy and Detraction. Of Gratitude, &c.

Sect. 1. THE fourth Branch of Negative Justice concerns the Credit of our Neighbours, which we are not to lessen or impair by any means, particularly not by false Reports. Of false reports there may be two sorts: the one is when a man says something of his neighbour, which he directly knows to be false; the other when possibly he has some slight surmise, or jealousie of the thing, but that upon such weak grounds, that 'tis as likely to be false as true. In either of these cases, there is a great guilt lies upon the reporter. That there doth so in the first of them, no body will doubt, every one acknowledging that it is the greatest baseness to invent a lie of another; but there is as little rea- *His Credit.*

ſon to queſtion the other, for he that reports a thing as a truth, which is but uncertain, is a liar alſo, or if he do not report it as a certainty, but only as a probability, yet then though he be not guilty of the lye, yet he is of the injuſtice of robbing his neighbour of his credit; for there is ſuch an aptneſs in men to believe ill of others, that any the lighteſt jealouſie will, if once it be ſpread abroad, ſerve for that purpoſe; and ſure it is a moſt horrible injuſtice upon every ſlight ſurmiſe and fancy to hazard the bringing ſo great an evil upon another; eſpecially when it is conſidered, that thoſe ſurmiſes commonly ſpring rather from ſome cenſoriouſneſs, peeviſhneſs, or malice in the ſurmiſer, than from any real fault in the perſon ſo ſuſpected.

False-witneſs.

2. The manner of ſpreading theſe falſe reports of both kinds, is not always the ſame; ſometimes it is more open and avowed, ſometimes more cloſe and private: the open is many times by falſe witneſs before the Courts of Juſtice: and this not only hurts a man in his credit, but in other reſpects alſo: 'tis the delivering him up to the puniſhment of the Law, and according to the nature of the crime pretended does him more or leſs miſchief; but if it be of the higheſt kind, it may concern his life, as we ſee it did in *Naboth*'s caſe, 1 *Kings* 21. How great and crying a ſin it is in this reſpect, as alſo in that of the perjury, you may learn from what hath been ſaid of both thoſe ſins. I am now to conſider it only, as it touches the credit; and to that it is a moſt grievous wound,

thus

thus to have a crime publickly witneſſed againſt one, and ſuch as is ſcarce curable by any thing that can afterwards be done to clear him, and therefore whoever is guilty of this, doth a moſt outragious injuſtice to his neighbour: this is that which is expreſly forbidden in the ninth Commandment, and was by God appointed to be puniſht by the inflicting of the very ſame ſuffering upon him, which his falſe teſtimony aimed to bring upon the other, *Deut.* 19. 16.

3. The ſecond open way of ſpreading theſe reports, is by a publick and common declaring of them; though not before the Magiſtrate, as in the other caſe, yet in all companies, and before ſuch as are likely to carry it further, and this is uſually done with bitter railings and reproaches, it being an ordinary Art of ſlanderers, to revile thoſe whom they ſlander, that ſo by the ſharpneſs of the accuſation, they may have the greater impreſſion on the minds of the hearers: this both in reſpect of the ſlander, and the railing, is a high injury, and both of them ſuch, as debar the committers from Heaven; thus *Pſalm* 15. where the upright man is deſcribed, that ſhall have his part there, this is one ſpecial thing, verſe 3. *That he ſlandereth not his neighbour.* And for railing, the Apoſtle in ſeveral places reckons it amongſt thoſe works of the fleſh, which are to ſhut men out both from the Church here by excommunication, as you may ſee, 1 *Cor.* 15. 11. and from the Kingdom of God hereafter, as it is, 1 *Cor.* 6. 10. *Publick ſlanders.*

Whiſpering.

4. The other more cloſe and private way of ſpreading ſuch reports is that of the Whiſperer, he that goes about from one to another, and privately vents his ſlanders, not out of an intent by that means to make them leſs publick, but rather more: this trick of delivering them by way of ſecret, being the way to make them both more believed, and more ſpoken of too; for he that receives ſuch a tale, as a ſecret from one, thinks to pleaſe ſome body elſe, by delivering it as a ſecret to him alſo; and ſo it paſſes from one hand to another, till at laſt it ſpread over a whole Town. This ſort of ſlanderer is of all others the moſt dangerous, for he works in the dark, tyes all he ſpeaks to, not to own him as the author; ſo that whereas in the more publick accuſations, the party may have ſome means of clearing himſelf and detecting his accuſer, here he ſhall have no poſſibility of that, the ſlander, like a ſecret poyſon, works incurable effects, before ever the man diſcern it. This ſin of whiſpering is by S. *Paul* mentioned among theſe great crimes, which are the effects of a reprobate mind, *Rom.* 1. 29. It is indeed one of the moſt incurable wounds of this ſword of the tongue; the very bane and peſt of humane ſociety: and that which not only robs ſingle perſons of their good names, but oftentimes whole families, nay, publick Societies of men of their peace; what ruines, what confuſions hath this one ſin wrought in the world? 'Tis *Solomon's* obſervation, *Prov.* 18. 28. that a *Whiſperer ſeparateth chief friends*, and ſure one may truly ſay of tongues

tongues thus employed, that they are *ſet on fire of Hell*, as S. *James* ſaith, Chap. 3. 6.

4. This is ſuch a guilt, that we are to beware of all the degrees of approach to it, of which there are ſeveral ſteps; the firſt is the giving ear to, and cheriſhing of thoſe that come with ſlanders, for they that entertain and receive them, encourage them in the practice; for as our common Proverb ſays, If there were no Receivers, there would be no Thief; ſo if there were none that would give an ear to tales, there would be no tale-bearers. A ſecond ſtep is, the giving too eaſie credit to them, for this helps them to attain part of their end. They deſire to get a general ill opinion of ſuch a man, but the way of doing it muſt be by cauſing it, firſt, in particular men: and if thou ſuffer them to do it in thee, they have ſo far proſpered in their aim. And for thy own part thou doeſt a great injuſtice to thy neighbour, to believe ill of him without a juſt ground, which the accuſation of ſuch a perſon certainly is not. A third ſtep is the reporting to others, what is thus told thee; by which thou makeſt thy ſelf directly a party in the ſlander, and after thou haſt unjuſtly withdrawn from thy neighbour thy own good opinion, endeavoureſt to rob him alſo of that of others. This is very little below the guilt of the firſt whiſperer, and tends as much to the ruine of our neighbours credit. And theſe ſeveral degrees have ſo cloſe a dependance one upon another, that it will be very hard for him that allows himſelf the firſt, to eſcape the other, and

Several ſteps towards this ſin.

indeed he that can take delight to hear his neighbour defamed, may well be presumed of so malicious a humour, that 'tis not likely he should stick at spreading the slander. He therefore that will preserve his innocence in this matter, must never in the least degree cherish or countenance any that brings these false reports. And it is not less necessary to his peace, than to his innocency; for he that once entertains them, must never expect quiet, but shall be continually incited, and stirred up even against his nearest and dearest relations; so that this whisperer, and slanderer is to be lookt on by all, as a common enemy, he being so as well to those to whom, as of whom he speaks.

Despising and scoffing.

6. But besides this grosser way of slandering, there is another, whereby we may impair and lessen the credit of our neighbour, and that is by contempt and despising, one common effect whereof is scoffing, and deriding him. This is very injurious to a mans reputation. For the generality of men do rather take up opinions upon trust, than judgment, and therefore if they see a man despised, and scorned, they will be apt to do the like. But besides this effect of it, there is a present injustice in the very act of despising, and scorning others. There are ordinarily but three things which are made the occasions of it, (unless it be with such, with whom vertue and godliness are made the most reproachful things, and such despising is not only an injury to our neighbour, but even to God himself, for whose sake it is, that he is so despised) those

three are, first, the infirmities, secondly, the calamities, thirdly, the sins of a man, and each of these are very far from being ground of our triumphing over him.

7. First, for infirmities, be they either of body or mind, the deformity and unhandsomness of the one, or the weakness and folly of the other, they are things out of his power to help, they are not his faults, but the wise dispensations of the great Creator, who bestows the excellencies of body and mind, as he pleases; and therefore to scorn a man, because he hath them not, is in effect to reproach God who gave them not to him. *For infirmities.*

8. So also for the calamities and miseries that befal a man, be it want or sickness, or whatever else, these also come by the providence of God, who raiseth up and pulleth down, as seems good to him, and it belongs not to us to judge, what are the motives to him to do so, as many do, who upon any affliction that befals another, are presently concluding, that sure it is some extraordinary guilt, which pulls this upon him, though they have no particular to lay to his charge. This rash judgment our Saviour reproves in the *Jews*, *Luke* 13. where on occasion of the extraordinary sufferings of the *Galileans*, he asketh them, verse 2, 3. *Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things? I tell you nay, but except you repent, ye shall all likewise perish.* When we see Gods hand heavy upon others, it is no *For calamities.*

part of our buſineſs to judge them, but our ſelves, and by repentance to prevent what our own ſins have deſerved. But to reproach, and revile any that are in affliction, is that barbarous cruelty taken notice of by the *Pſalmiſt*, as the height of wickedneſs, *Pſalm 69. 26. They perſecute him whom thou haſt ſmitten, and they talk to the grief of them whom thou haſt wounded:* In all the miſeries of others, compaſſion becomes a debt to them; how unjuſt are they then, that inſtead of paying them that debt, afflict them with ſcorn and reproach?

For ſins.

9. Nay, the very ſins of men, though, as they have more of their wills in them, they may ſeem more to deſerve reproach, yet certainly they alſo oblige us to the former duty of compaſſion, and that in the higheſt degree, as being the things, which of all others make a man the moſt miſerable. In all theſe caſes, if we conſider how ſubject we are to the like our ſelves, and that it is only Gods mercy to us, by which we are preſerved from the worſt that any man elſe is under, it will ſurely better become us to look up to him with thankfulneſs, than down on them with contempt and deſpiſing. Thus you ſee the direct injuſtice of ſcorning and contemning our brethren, to which when that other is added, which naturally follows, as a conſequent of this, to wit, the begetting the like contempt in others, there can ſure be no doubt of its being a great and horrible injuſtice to our neighbour in reſpect of his credit.

10. Now how great the injury of deſtroying a mans credit is, may be meaſured by theſe two things; firſt, the value of the thing he is robbed of, and ſecondly, the difficulty of making reparations. For the firſt, 'tis commonly known, that a mans good name is a thing he holds moſt precious, oftentimes dearer than his life, as we ſee by the hazards men ſometimes run to preſerve even a miſtaken reputation; but 'tis ſure, it is that, which hath even by ſober men been eſteemed one of the greateſt happineſſes of life: And to ſome ſort of men, ſuch eſpecially as ſubſiſt by dealings in the world, 'tis ſo neceſſary, that it may well be reckoned as the means of their livelihood, and then ſure, 'tis no ſlight matter to rob a man of what is thus valuable to him. *Deſtroying the credit, a great injury,*

11. Secondly, the difficulty of making reparations encreaſeth the injury, and that is ſuch in this caſe of defamation, that I may rather call it an impoſſibility, than a difficulty. For when men are poſſeſt of an ill opinion of a perſon, 'tis no eaſie matter to work it out: ſo that the ſlanderer is herein like a young Conjurer, that raiſes a Devil he knows not how to lay again. Nay, ſuppoſe men were generally as willing to lay down ill conceits of their neighbours, as they are to take them up, yet how is it poſſible for him that makes even the moſt publick recantation of his ſlander, to be ſure that every man that hath come to the hearing of the one, ſhall do ſo of the other alſo? And if there *and irreparable.*

be but one person, that doth not, (as probably there will be many) then is the reparation still short of the injury.

Yet every guilty person must do all he can to repair the injury.

12. This consideration is very fit to make men afraid of doing this wrong to their neighbour; but let it not be made use of to excuse those that have already done the wrong from endeavouring to make the best reparations they can; for though 'tis odds, it will not equal the injury, yet let them however do what they are able towards it. And this is so necessary towards the obtaining pardon of the sin, that none must expect the one, that do not perform the other. Whosoever therefore sets himself to repent of his faults of this kind, must by all prudent means endeavour to restore his neighbour to that degree of credit he hath deprived him of; and if that be not to be done without bringing the shame upon himself of confessing publickly the slander, he must rather submit to that, than be wanting to this necessary part of justice, which he ows to the wronged party.

13. Thus I have gone through these four branches of Negative Justice to our Neighbour; wherein we must yet further observe, that this justice binds us, not only in respect of our words and actions, but of our very thoughts and affections also; we are not only forbid to hurt, but to hate; not only restrained from bringing any of these evils forementioned upon

Justice in the thoughts.

upon him, but we muſt not ſo much as wiſh them before, nor delight in them after they are befallen him: we muſt take no pleaſure either in the ſin of his Soul, or hurt of his body: we muſt not envy him any good thing he enjoys, nor ſo much as wiſh to poſſeſs our ſelves of it; neither will it ſuffice us, that we ſo bridle our tongue, that we neither ſlander, nor revile, if we have that malice in our hearts, which makes us wiſh his diſcredit; or rejoyce when we find it procured, though we have no hand in the procuring it. This is the peculiar property of Gods Laws, that they reach to the heart: whereas mens can extend only to the words and actions; and the reaſon is clear, becauſe he is the only Law-giver, that can ſee what is in the heart: therefore if there were the perfecteſt innocency in our tongue and hands, yet if there be not this purity of heart, it will never ſerve to acquit us before him. The counſel therefore of *Solomon* is excellent, *Prov.* 4. 23. *Keep thy heart with all diligence, for out of it are the iſſues of life.* Let us ſtrictly guard that, ſo that no malicious unjuſt thought enter there; and that not only, as it may be the means of betraying us to the groſſer act, but alſo as it is in it ſelf ſuch a pollution in Gods ſight, as will unfit us for the bleſſed viſion of God, whom none but the pure in heart have promiſe of ſeeing, *Matth.* 5. 8. *Bleſſed are the pure in heart, for they ſhall ſee God.*

14. I come now to ſpeak of the poſitive part of Juſtice, which is the yielding to every man that which by any kind of right he may challenge from *Poſitive Juſtice.*

from us. Of these dues there are some that are general to all mankind, others that are restrained within some certain conditions and qualities of men, and become due only by virtue of those qualifications.

Speaking Truth a due to all men.

15. Of the first sort, that is, those that are due to all men, we may reckon, first the speaking Truth, which is a common debt we owe to all mankind; speech is given us as the instrument of intercourse and society one with another, the means of discovering the mind which otherwise lies hid and concealed, so that were it not for this, our conversations would be but the same as of beasts; Now this being intended for the good and advantage of mankind, 'tis a due to it, that it be used to that purpose; but he that Lies, is so far from paying that debt, that on the contrary he makes his speech the means of injuring and deceiving him he speaks to.

Lying expressly forbidden in Scripture.

16. There might much be said to shew the several sorts of Obligations we lie under to speak truth to all men; but supposing I write to Christians, I need not insist upon any other, than the Commands we have of it in Scripture; thus *Eph.* 4. 25. the Apostle commands, that *putting away lying, they speak every man truth with his neighbour:* And again, *Col.* 3. 9. *Lye not one to another:* And *Prov.* 6. 17. a lying tongue is mentioned as one of those things that are abominations to the Lord. Yea so much doth he hate a lye, that it

is

is not the moſt pious and religious end, that can reconcile him to it; the man that lies, though in a zeal to Gods glory, ſhall yet be judged as a ſinner, *Rom.* 3. 7. What ſhall then become of thoſe multitudes of men that lie on quite other ends? Some out of malice, to miſchief others; ſome out of covetouſneſs, to defraud their neighbours; ſome out of pride, to ſet themſelves out; and ſome out of fear, to avoid danger, or hide a fault. But of a yet ſtranger ſort, than all theſe, are thoſe, that do it without any diſcernible temptation, that will tell lies by way of ſtory, take pleaſure in telling incredible things, from which themſelves reap nothing, but the reputation of impertinent lyars.

The great commonneſs and folly of this ſin.

12. Among theſe divers kinds of falſehood, Truth is become ſuch a rarity among us, that it is a moſt difficult matter to find ſuch a man as *David* deſcribes; *Pſalm* 15. 2. *That ſpeaketh the truth from his heart.* Men have ſo glibbed their tongues to lying, that they do it familiarly upon any or no occaſion, never thinking that they are obſerved either by God or man. But they are extremely deceived in both; for there is ſcarce any ſin (that is at all endeavoured to be hid) which is more diſcernible even to men: they that have a cuſtom of lying, ſeldom fail (be their memory never ſo good) at ſome time or other to betray themſelves; and when they do, there is no ſort of ſin meets with greater ſcorn and reproach; a Lyar being by all accounted a title of the greateſt infamy and ſhame,

ſhame. But as for God, 'tis madneſs to hope that all their Arts can diſguiſe them from him, who needs none of thoſe caſual ways of diſcovery which men do, but ſees the heart, and ſo knows at the very inſtant of ſpeaking, the falſehood of what is ſaid: and then by his Title of the God of Truth, is tyed not only to hate, but puniſh it: and accordingly you ſee, *Rev.* 21. that the lyars are in the number of thoſe that are ſhut out of the New *Jeruſalem*; and not only ſo, but alſo have their *part in the lake that burneth with Fire and Brimſtone.* If therefore thou be not of the humor of that unjuſt judge Chriſt ſpeaks of, *Luke* 18. 2. who *neither feared God, nor regarded man,* thou muſt reſolve on this part of Juſtice, the putting away lying, which is abhorred by both.

Courteous behaviour a due to all men.

18 A ſecond thing we owe to all is Humanity and Courteſie of behaviour, contrary to that ſullen churliſhneſs we find ſpoken of in *Nabal*, who was of ſuch a temper, *that a man could not ſpeak to him,* 1 *Sam.* 25. 17. There is ſure ſo much of reſpect due to the very nature of mankind, that no accidental advantage of wealth or honour, which one man hath above another, can acquit him from that debt to it, even in the perſon of the meaneſt; and therefore that crabbed and harſh behaviour to any that bears but the form of a man, is an injuſtice to that nature he partakes of. And when we conſider how much that nature is dignified by the Son of God his taking it upon him, the obligation to reverence it is yet

greater,

greater, and consequently the sin of thus contemning it.

19. This is the common guilt of all proud and haughty persons, who are so busie in admiring themselves, that they overlook all that is valuable in others, and so think they owe not so much as common civility to other men, whilst they set up themselves, as *Nebuchadnezzar* did his image, *to be worshipped of all.* This is sure very contrary to what the Apostle exhorts, *Rom.* 12. 10. *In honour prefer one another*; and again, *Phil.* 2. 4. *Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others:* and let such remember the sentence of our blessed Saviour, *Luke* 14. 11. *He that exalteth himself shall be abased, and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted,* which we often find made good to us, in the strange downfals of proud men. And it is no wonder, for this sin makes both God and men our enemies; God, as the Scripture every where testifies, abhors it, and all that are guilty of it, and men are by means of it used so contemptuously and unkindly by us, that they are by nothing more provoked against us; and then whom God and man thus resist, who shall secure and uphold? *Not payed by the proud man.*

20. A third thing we owe to all is Meekness; that is, such a patience and gentleness towards all, as may bridle that mad passion of anger, which is not only very uneasie to our selves, as hath already been shewed, but also very mischievous to our neighbours, *Meekness a due to all men.*

as the many outrages, that are oft committed in it, do abundantly teſtifie. That this duty of meekneſs is to be extended to all men, there is no doubt: for the Apoſtle in expreſs words commands it, 1 *Theſſ.* 5. 14. *Be patient towards all men,* and that it ſhould ſeem, in ſpight of all provocation to the contrary, for the very next words are, *See that none render evil for evil, or railing for railing*; and *Timothy* is commanded to exerciſe this meekneſs even towards them who oppoſe themſelves againſt the Doctrine of the Goſpel, 2 *Tim.* 2. 25. which was a caſe, wherein ſome heat would probably have been allowed, if it might have been in any.

Brawling very inſufferable.

21. This vertue of meekneſs is ſo neceſſary to the preſerving the peace of the world, that it is no wonder, that Chriſt, who came to plant peace among men, ſhould enjoyn meekneſs to all. I am ſure the contrary effects of rage and anger are every where diſcernible; it breeds diſquiet in Kingdoms, in Neighbourhoods, in Families, and even between the neareſt relations; 'tis ſuch a humour, that *Solomon* warns us never to enter a friendſhip with a man that is of it, *Prov.* 22. 24. *Make no friendſhip with an angry man, and with a furious man thou ſhalt not go.* It makes a man unfit to be either friend or companion, and indeed makes one inſufferable to all that have to do with him, as we are again taught by *Solomon*, Prov. 21. 19. where he prefers the *dwelling in a wilderneſs rather than with a contentious and angry woman*; and yet a woman has ordinarily only that

that one weapon of the tongue to offend with. Indeed to any that have not the ſame unquietneſs of humour, there can ſcarce be a greater uneaſineſs, than to converſe with thoſe that have it, though it never proceed further than words. How great this ſin is, we may judge by what our Saviour ſays of it, *Matth.* 5. where there are ſeveral degrees of puniſhment allotted to ſeveral degrees of it: but alas! we daily out-go that which he there ſets as the higheſt ſtep of this ſin; the calling, *Thou fool*, is a modeſt ſort of reviling, compared with thoſe multitudes of bitter reproaches we uſe in our rages.

It leads to that great ſin of curſing.

11. Nay, we often go yet higher; reproaches ſerve not our turn, but we muſt curſe too. How common is it to hear men uſe the horridſt execrations and curſings upon every the ſlighteſt cauſe of diſpleaſure? Nay, perhaps without any cauſe at all; ſo utterly have we forgot the rule of the Apoſtle, *Rom.* 12. 14. *Bleſs and curſe not*; Yea, the precept of our bleſſed Saviour himſelf, *Matth.* 5. 44. *Pray for thoſe that deſpightfully uſe you.* Chriſt bids us pray for thoſe who do us all injury, and we are often curſing thoſe who do us none. This is a kind of ſaying our prayers backward indeed, which is ſaid to be part of the Ceremony the Devil uſes at the making of a Witch, and we have in this caſe alſo reaſon to look on it, as a means of bringing us into acquaintance and league with that accurſed ſpirit here, and to a perpetual abiding with him hereafter. 'Tis the language of Hell, which can never

never fit us to be Citizens of the New *Jeruſalem*, but marks us out for inhabitants of that land of darkneſs. I conclude this with the advice of the Apoſtle, *Eph.* 4. 31. *Let all bitterneſs and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil ſpeaking be put away from you with all malice.*

Particular dues.

23. Having ſpoken thus far of thoſe common dues, wherein all men are concerned and have a right, I am now to proceed to thoſe other ſorts of dues, which belong to particular perſons, by virtue of ſome ſpecial qualification. Theſe qualifications may be of three kinds, that of Excellency, that of Want, and that of Relation.

A reſpect due to men of extraordinary gifts.

24. By that of Excellency, I mean any extraordinary gifts, or endowments of a perſon; ſuch as wiſdom, learning, and the like, but eſpecially grace. Theſe being the ſingular gifts of God, have a great value and reſpect due to them, whereſoever they are to be found; and this we muſt readily pay by a willing and glad acknowledgment of thoſe his gifts in any he has beſtowed them on, and bearing them a reverence and reſpect, anſwerable thereunto, and not out of an overweening of our own excellencies, deſpiſe and undervalue thoſe of others, as they do who will yield nothing to be reaſon, but what themſelves ſpeak, nor any thing piety, but what agrees with their own practice.

25. Alſo

25. Also we must not envy or grudge that they have those gifts, for that is not only an injustice to them, but injurious also to God who gave them, as it is at large set forth in the parable of the labourers, *Matth.* 20. where he asks them who grumbled at the Masters bounty to others, *Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with my own? is thine eye evil because mine is good?* This envying at God's goodness to others, is in effect a murmuring against God, who thus disposes it; neither can there be a greater, and more direct opposition against him, than for me to hate and wish ill to a man, for no other reason, but because God has loved and done well to him. And then in respect of the man, 'tis the most unreasonable thing in the world, to love him the less, merely because he has those good qualities, for which I ought to love him more. *We are not to envy them.*

26. Neither must we detract from the excellencies of others, we must not seek to eclipse or darken them by denying either the kinds or degrees of them, by that means to take off that esteem which is due to them. This sin of detraction is generally the effect of the former, of envy; he that envies a mans worth, will be apt to do all he can to lessen it in the opinions of others, and to that purpose will either speak slightly of his excellencies, or if they be so apparent, that he knows not how to cloud them, he will try if he can by reporting some either real, or feigned infirmity of his, take off from the value of the other, and so by casting in some *Nor detract from them.*

ſome dead flies, as the Wiſe man ſpeaks, *Eccleſ.* 10. 1. ſtrive to *corrupt the ſavour of the ointment.* This is a great injuſtice, and directly contrary to that duty we owe, of acknowledging and reverencing the gifts of God in our brethren.

The folly of both thoſe ſins.

27. And both thoſe ſins of envy and detraction do uſually prove as great follies as wickedneſs; the envy conſtantly brings pain and torment to a mans ſelf, whereas if he could but chearfully and gladly look on thoſe good things of anothers, he could never fail to be the better for them himſelf: the very pleaſure of ſeeing them would be ſome advantage to him: but beſides that, thoſe gifts of his brother may be many ways helpful to him; his wiſdom and learning may give him inſtruction; his piety and vertue, example, &c. But all this the envious man loſeth, and hath nothing in exchange for it, but a continual fretting, and gnawing of heart.

28. And then for detraction, that can hardly be ſo managed, but it will be found out; he that is ſtill putting in Caveats againſt mens good thoughts of others, will quickly diſcover himſelf to do it out of envy, and then that will be ſure to leſſen their eſteem of himſelf, but not of thoſe he envies, it being a ſort of bearing teſtimony to thoſe excellencies, that he thinks them worth the envying.

A reſpect due to men in regard of their ranks and qualities.

29. What hath been ſaid of the value and reſpect due to thoſe excellencies of the mind, may in

in a lower degree be applied to the outward advantages of honour, greatness, and the like. These though they are not of equal value with the former (and such for which no man is to prize himself) yet in regard that these degrees and distinctions of men are by God's wise providence disposed for the better ordering of the world, there is such a civil respect due to those, to whom God hath dispens'd them, as may best preserve that order, for which they were intended. Therefore all inferiors are to behave themselves to their superiours with modesty and respect, and not by a rude boldness confound that order which it hath pleased God to set in the world, but according as our Church Catechism teaches, *Order themselves lowly and reverently to all their betters.* And here the former caution against envy comes in most seasonably; these outward advantages being things, of which generally men have more taste, than of the other, and therefore will be more apt to envy and repine to see others exceed them therein; to this therefore all the former considerations against envy will be very proper, and the more necessary to be made use of, by how much the temptation is in this case to most minds the greater.

Dues to those that are in any sort of want.

30. The second qualification is that of want; whoever is in distress for any thing, wherewith I can supply him, that distress of his makes it a duty in me so to supply him, and this in all kinds of wants. Now the ground of its being a duty is, that God hath

hath given men abilities not only for their own use, but for the advantage and benefit of others, and therefore what is thus given for their use, becomes a debt to them, whenever their need requires it. Thus he that is ignorant and wants knowledge, is to be instructed by him that hath it, and this is one special end, why that knowledge is given him. *The tongue of the learned is given to speak a word in season, Esay* 50. 4. He that is in sadness and affliction, is to be comforted by him that is himself in chearfulness. This we see S. *Paul* makes the end of Gods comforting him, that he *might be able to comfort them that are in any trouble,* 2 *Cor.* 1. 4. He that is in any course of sin, and wants reprehension and counsel, must have that want supplied to him by those who have such abilities and opportunities, as may make it likely to do good. That this is a justice we owe to our neighbour, appears plainly by that Text, *Lev.* 19. 17. *Thou shalt not hate thy brother in thy heart, thou shalt in any wise reprove him, and not suffer sin upon him*; where we are under the same obligation to reprove him, that we are not to hate him. He that lies under any slander, or unjust defamation, is to be defended and cleared by him that knows his innocence, or else he makes himself guilty of the slander, because he neglects to do that which may remove it; and how great an injustice that of slandering our neighbour is, I have already shewed.

To the poor.

31. Lastly, He that is in poverty and need, must be relieved by him that is in plenty; and he is bound to it, not only

only in charity, but even in justice. *Solomon* calls it a due, *Prov.* 3. 27. *Withhold not good from him to whom it is due, when it is in the power of thine hand to do it:* and what that good is, he explains in the very next verse: *Say not to thy neighbour, Go and come again, and to morrow I will give, when thou hast it by thee.* It seems 'tis the withholding a due, so much as to defer giving to our poor neighbour. And we find God did among the *Jews* separate a certain portion of every mans encrease to the use of the poor, a tenth every third year (which is all one with a thirtieth part every year,) *Deut.* 14. 28, 29. And this was to be paid, not as a charity, or liberality, but as a debt, they were unjust, if they withheld it. And surely we have no reason to think, that Christian Justice is sunk so much below the Jewish, that either nothing at all, or a less proportion is now required of us. I wish our practice were but at all answerable to our obligation in this point, and then surely we should not see so many *Lazarus*'s lie unrelieved at our doors, they having a better right to our superfluities, than we our selves have; and then what is it but arrant robbery to bestow that upon our vanities, nay our sins, which should be their portion?

God withdraws those abilities which are not thus employed.

32. In all the foregoing cases he that hath ability is to look upon himself as Gods steward, who hath put it into his hands to distribute to them that want, and therefore not to do it, is the same injustice and fraud, that it would be in any steward to purse up that money

for

for his private benefit, which was intruſted to him, for the maintenance of the family; and he that ſhall do thus hath juſt reaſon to expect the doom of the unjuſt ſteward, *Luke* 16. *to be put out of his ſtewardſhip*, to have thoſe abilities taken from him, which he hath ſo unfaithfully employed. And as for all the reſt, ſo particularly for that of wealth, 'tis very commonly to be obſerved, that it is withdrawn from thoſe that thus defraud the poor of their parts, the griping miſer coming often by ſtrange undiſcernible ways to poverty; and no wonder, he having no title to Gods bleſſing on his heap, who does not conſecrate a part to him in his poor members. And therefore we ſee the *Iſraelites* before they could make that challenge of Gods promiſe to bleſs them, *Deut.* 26. 15. *Look down from thy holy habitation and bleſs thy people Iſrael*, &c. they were firſt to pay the poor mans tithes, *verſe* 12. without which they could lay no claim to it. This withholding *more than is meet*, as *Solomon* ſays, *Prov.* 11. 24. *tends to poverty*; and therefore as thou wouldeſt play the good husband for thy ſelf, be careful to perform this juſtice according to thy ability to all that are in want.

Duties in reſpect of relation.

33. The third qualification is that of relation, and of that there may be divers ſorts, ariſing from divers grounds, and duties anſwerable to each of them. There is firſt a relation of a Debtor to a Creditor; and he that ſtands in that relation to any, whether by vertue of bargain, loan or promiſe, 'tis his duty to pay juſtly what he ows, if he be able

able (as on the other side, if he be not, 'tis the Creditors, to deal charitably and Christianly with him, and not to exact of him beyond his ability.) But I need not insist on this, having already, by shewing you the sin of withholding debts, informed you of this duty.

Gratitude to Benefactors.

34. There is also a relation of an obliged Person to his Benefactor, that is, one that hath done him good, of what kind soever, whether spiritual or corporal; and the duty of that person is, first thankfulness, that is, a ready and hearty acknowledgment of the courtesie received: secondly, prayer for God's blessings, and rewards upon him; and thirdly, an endeavour, as opportunity and ability serves, to make returns of kindness, by doing good turns back again. This duty of gratitude to Benefactors is so generally acknowledged by all, even the most barbarous and savagest of Men, that he must have put off much of his humane nature, that refuses to perform it. The very *Publicans* and sinners, as our Saviour says, *do good to those that do good to them.*

The contrary too common.

35. Yet how many of us fail even in this! how frequent is it to see Men, not only neglect to repay courtesies, but return injuries instead of them? It is too observable in many particulars, but in none more, than in the case of advice, and admonition, which is of all others the most precious part of kindness, the noblest good turn that can be done from one Man to another. And therefore those that do this to

us, ſhould be look'd on as our prime and greateſt benefactors. But alas! how few are there that can find gratitude, ſhall I ſay? nay, patience for ſuch a courteſie? Go about to admoniſh a Man of a fault, or tell him of an Error, he preſently looks on you as his enemy: you are as S. *Paul* tells the *Galatians*, Chap. 4. 16. *become his enemy, becauſe you tell him the truth:* ſuch a pride therein Mens hearts, that they muſt not be told of any thing amiſs, though it be with no other intent, but that they may amend it. A ſtrange madneſs this is, the ſame that it would be in a ſick Man, to fly in the face of him that comes to cure him, on a fancy that he diſparaged him in ſuppoſing him ſick; ſo that we may well ſay with the Wiſe man, *Prov.* 12. 1. *He that hateth reproof is brutiſh.* There cannot in the World be a more unhappy temper, for it fortifies a Man in his ſins; raiſes ſuch Mounts and Bulwarks about them, that no Man can come to aſſault them; and if we may believe *Solomon*, deſtruction will not fail to attend it, *Prov.* 29. 1. *He that being often reproved hardneth his neck, ſhall ſuddenly be deſtroyed, and that without remedy.* But then again in reſpect of the admoniſher, 'tis the greateſt injuſtice, I may ſay, cruelty that can be; he comes in tenderneſs and compaſſion to reſcue thee from danger; and to that purpoſe puts himſelf upon a very uneaſie task; for ſuch the general impatience Men have to admonition, hath now made it, and what a defeat, what a grief is it to him to find, that inſtead of reforming the firſt fault, thou art run into a ſecond, to wit, that of cauſleſs diſpleaſure againſt him? This is one of the worſt, and yet I doubt, the commoneſt ſort

of

of unthankfulneſs to Benefactors, and ſo a great failing in that duty we owe to that ſort of relation. But perhaps theſe will be lookt on as remote relations, (yet 'tis ſure they are ſuch as challenge all that duty I have aſſigned to them) I ſhall in the next place proceed to thoſe relations, which are by all acknowledged to be of the greateſt nearneſs.

SUNDAY XIV.

Of duty to Magiſtrates, Paſtors. Of the duty of Parents to Children, &c. Of Childrens duty unto Parents, &c.

Sect. 1. THE firſt of thoſe nearer ſorts of relations is that of a Parent; and here it will be neceſſary to conſider the ſeveral ſorts of Parents, according to which the duty of them is to be meaſured. Thoſe are theſe three, the Civil, the Spiritual, the Natural. *Duty to Parents.*

2. The Civil Parent is he whom God hath eſtabliſht the Supreme Magiſtrate, who by a juſt right poſſeſſes the Throne in a Nation. This is the common Father of all thoſe that are under his authority. *Duties to the Supreme Magiſtrate.*

Honour. The duty we owe to this Parent, is first Honour and Reverence, looking on him, as upon one, on whom God hath ſtamped much of his own power and authority, and therefore paying him all honour and eſteem, never daring upon any pretence whatſoever, to *ſpeak evil of the Ruler of our people*, Acts 23. 5.

Tribute. 3. Secondly, paying Tribute; This is expreſly commanded by the Apoſtle, *Rom.* 13. 6. *Pay ye Tribute alſo, for they are Gods Miniſters attending continually upon this very thing.* God has ſet them apart as Miniſters for the common good of the People, and therefore 'tis all juſtice, they ſhould be maintained and ſupported by them. And indeed when it is conſidered, what are the cares and troubles of that high calling, how many thorns are platted in every Crown, we have very little reaſon to envy them theſe dues; and it may be truly ſaid, there is none of their poor labouring ſubjects that earns their living ſo hardly.

Prayers for them. 4. Thirdly, We are to pray for them: this is alſo expreſly commanded by the Apoſtle, 1 *Tim.* 2. 2. to be done for *Kings, and for all that are in authority.* The buſineſſes of that calling are ſo weighty, the dangers and hazards of it ſo great, that they of all others need prayers for God's direction, aſſiſtance, and bleſſing, and the prayers that are thus poured out for them, will return into our own boſoms, for the bleſſings they receive from God tend to the good of the

the People, to their *living a quiet and a peaceable life*, as it is in the close of the Verse forementioned.

5. Fourthly, We are to pay them Obedience. This is likewise strictly charged by the Apostle, 1 *Pet.* 2. 13. *Submit your selves to every ordinance of man for the Lords sake, whether it be to the King as Supreme, or unto Governours as those that are sent by him.* We owe such an obedience to the supreme power, that whoever is authoriz'd by him, we are to submit to; and S *Paul* likewise is most full to this purpose, *Rom.* 13. 1. *Let every soul be subject to the higher powers:* And again, Verse 2. *Whosoever resisteth the powers, resisteth the Ordinance of God.* And 'tis observable that these Precepts were given at a time, when those powers were Heathens, and cruel persecutors of Christianity; to shew us that no pretence of the wickedness of our Rulers can free us of this duty. An obedience we must pay either Active or Passive; the Active in the case of all lawful commands; that is, when ever the Magistrate commands something, which is not contrary to some command of God, we are then bound to act according to that command of the Magistrate, to do the things he requires. But when he enjoyns any thing contrary to what God hath commanded, we are not then to pay him this active obedience: we may, nay we must refuse thus to act, (yet here we must be very well assured that the thing is so contrary, and not pretend conscience for a cloak of stubbornness) we are in that case to *obey God rather than man.* *Obedience.*

But even this is a ſeaſon for the Paſſive obedience, we muſt patiently ſuffer, what he inflicts on us for ſuch refuſal, and not to ſecure our ſelves, riſe up againſt him, *For who can ſtretch his hand againſt the Lords anointed, and be guiltleſs?* ſays *David* to *Abiſhai*, 1 *Sam.* 26. 9. and that at a time when *David* was under a great perſecution from *Saul*, nay, had alſo the aſſurance of the Kingdom after him; and S. *Paul's* ſentence in this caſe is moſt heavy, *Rom.* 13. 2. *They that reſiſt ſhall receive to themſelves damnation.* Here is very ſmall encouragement to any to riſe up againſt the lawful Magiſtrate, for though they ſhould ſo far proſper here, as to ſecure themſelves from him by this means, yet there is a King of Kings from whom no power can ſhelter them, and this damnation in the cloſe will prove a ſad prize of their Victories. What is on the other ſide the duty of the Magiſtrate to the People will be vain to mention here, none of that rank being like to read this Treatiſe, and it being very uſeleſs for the People to enquire, what is the duty of their Supreme, wherein the moſt are already much better read, than in their own: it may ſuffice them to know, that whatſoever his duty is, or however performed, he is accountable to none but God, and no failing of his part can warrant them to fail of theirs.

Duties to our Paſtors.

6. The ſecond ſort of Parents are the ſpiritual; that is, the Miniſters of the Word, whether ſuch, as be Governours in the Church, or others under them, who are to perform the ſame offices to our Souls, that our natural

natural Parents do to our bodies. Thus S. *Paul* tells the *Corinthians*, that in *Christ Jesus he had begotten them through the Gospel*, 1 Cor. 4. 15. and the *Galatians*, Chap. 4. 19. that he *travels in birth of them, till Christ be formed in them*: And again, 1 Cor. 3. 2. *He had fed them with Milk*, that is, such Doctrines as were agreeable to that infant state of Christianity they were then in; but he had *stronger meat for them of full age*, Heb. 5. 14. All these are the offices of a Parent, and therefore they that perform them to us may well be accounted as such.

7. Our duty to these is first to love them, to bear them that kindness, which belongs to those who do us the greatest benefits. This is required by S. *Paul*, 1 Thess. 5. 13. *I beseech you, brethren, mark them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you, and esteem them very highly in love for their works sake.* The work is such as ought in all reason to procure them love, it being of the highest advantage to us. *Love.*

8. Secondly, 'tis our duty to value and esteem them, as we see in the text now mentioned; and surely this is most reasonable, if we consider either the nature of their work, or who it is that employs them. The nature of their work is of all others the most excellent. We use to value other professions proportionably to the dignity and worth of the things they deal in. Now surely there is no Merchandize of equal worth with a Soul; and this is their Traffick, rescuing precious Souls *Esteem.*

from perdition. And if we consider further, who it is that imploys them, it yet adds to the reverence due to them. They are *Ambassadors for Christ*, 2 *Cor.* 5. 20. And Ambassadors are by the laws of all Nations to be used with a respect answerable to the quality of those that send them. Therefore Christ tells his Disciples, when he sends them out to preach, *He that despiseth you despiseth me, and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me, Luke* 10 16. It seems there is more depends on the despising of Ministers, than Men ordinarily consider, 'tis the despising of God and Christ both. Let those think of this, who make it their pastime and sport to affront and deride this calling. And let those also, who dare presume to exercise the Offices of it, without being lawfully call'd to it, which is a most high presumption; 'tis as if a Man of his own head should go, as an Ambassador from his Prince. The Apostle says of the Priests of the Law, which yet are inferiour to those of the Gospel, *That no man taketh this honour to himself, but he which was called of God, Heb.* 5. 4. How shall then any Man dare to assume this greater honour to himself that is not called to it? Neither will it suffice to say, they have the inward call of the spirit; for since God hath established an order in the Church, for the admitting Men to this Office, they that shall take it upon them without that authority, resist that ordinance, and are but of the number of those thieves and robbers, as our Saviour speaks, *John* 10. *which come not in by the door*. Besides, the sad experience of these times shews, that many who pretend most to this inward

inward call of the ſpirit, are called by ſome other ſpirit than that of God, the doctrines they vent, being uſually directly contrary to that word of his, on which all true Doctrines muſt be founded. Such are to be lookt upon as theſe ſeducers, thoſe falſe prophets, whereof we are ſo often warn'd in the Epiſtles of the Apoſtles. And whoſoever countenances them, or follows them, partakes with them in their guilt. It is recorded of *Jeroboam*, as a crying ſin; that he made of the meaneſt of the people Prieſts; that is, ſuch as had by God's inſtitution no right to it: and whoever hearkens to theſe uncalled preachers, runs into that very ſin, for without the encouragement of being followed, they would not long continue in the courſe, and therefore they that give them that encouragement, have much to anſwer for, and are certainly guilty of the ſin of deſpiſing their true Paſtors, when they ſhall thus ſet up theſe falſe apoſtles againſt them. This is a guilt this age is too much concern'd in. God in his mercy ſo timely convince us of it, as may put a ſtop to that confuſion and impiety, which breaks in ſo faſt upon us by it.

9. Thirdly, We owe to them maintenance: but of this I have ſpoken already in the firſt part of this Book, and ſhall not here repeat. *Maintenance.*

Fourthly, We owe them obedience, *Obey them*, ſaith the Apoſtle, *that have the rule over you, and ſubmit your ſelves, for they watch for your ſouls*, Heb. 13. 17. This obedience is to be paid them in ſpiritual things; that is, whatſoever they out of Gods *Obedience.*

word shall declare to us to be God's commands, these we are diligently to obey, remembring that it is not they but God requires it, according to that of Christ, *He that heareth you heareth me, Luke* 10. 6. And this, whether it be delivered by the way of publick preaching, or private exhortation, for in both, so long as they keep them to the rule, which is God's Word, they are the *Messengers of the Lord of Hosts, Mal.* 2. 7. This obedience the Apostle inforceth from a double motive, one taken from their Ministry, another from themselves. *They watch*, says he, *for your Souls, as they that must give an account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief.* The People are by their obedience to enable their Pastors to give a comfortable account of their Souls; and it is a most unkind return of all their care and labours, to be put to grieve for the ill success of them. But then in the second place, 'tis their own concernment also; they may put their Ministers to the discomfort of seeing all their pains cast away, but themselves are like to get little by it, that (says the Apostle, *Heb.* 13. 17.) *will be unprofitable for you*; 'tis your selves that will finally prove the losers by it, you lose all those glorious rewards, which are offered, as the crown of this obedience; you get nothing but an addition to your sin and punishment; for as our Saviour tells the *Pharisees, if he had not come and spoken to them, they had not had sin, John* 15. 24. that is, in comparison with what they then had; so certainly they that never had the Gospel preached to them, are much more innocent than they that have heard and resisted it. And for the

the punishment, what Christ told those to whom he had preached, *that it should be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon*, which were Heathen Cities, *than for them*, the same undoubtedly we may conclude for our selves.

10. Lastly, We are to pray for them; This S. *Paul* every where requires of his spiritual children; thus *Eph.* 6.7,8. having commanded prayer for all Saints, he adds, *And for me that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly to make known the mystery of the Gospel*; and so again, *Col.* 4. 3. And this remains still a duty to these Spiritual Fathers, to pray for such assistances of God's spirit to them, as may enable them rightly to discharge that Holy Calling. I shall omit to set down here what is the duty of Ministers to the People, upon the same consideration on which I forbare to mention the duty of Magistrates. *Prayers for them.*

11. The third sort of Parent is the natural, the *Fathers of our flesh*, as the Apostle calls them, *Heb.* 12 9. And to these we owe several duties; as first, we owe them reverence and respect; we must behave our selves towards them with all humility and observance, and must not upon any pretence of infirmity in them despise or contemn them, either in outward behaviour, or so much as inwardly in our hearts. If indeed they have infirmities, it must be our business to cover, and conceal them; like *Shem* and *Japhet*, who, while cursed *Cham* publisht *Duties to our natural Parents.* *Reverence.*

liſht and *diſcloſed the nakedneſs of their father, covered it, Gen.* 9. 23. and that in ſuch a manner too, as even themſelves might not behold it. We are as much as may be to keep our ſelves from looking on thoſe nakednefſes of our Parents, which may tempt us to think irreverently of them. This is very contrary to the practice of too many Children, who do not only publiſh and deride the infirmities of their Parents, but pretend they have thoſe infirmities they have not; there is ordinarily ſuch a pride and headineſs in youth, that they cannot abide to ſubmit to the counſels and directions of their Elders, and therefore to ſhake them off, are willing to have them paſs for the effects of dotage, when they are indeed the fruits of ſobriety and experience. To ſuch the exhortation of *Solomon* is very neceſſary, *Prov.* 24. 22. *Hearken to thy father that begat thee, and deſpiſe not thy mother when ſhe is old.* A multitude of Texts more there are in that Book to this purpoſe, which ſhews that the wiſeſt of Men thought it neceſſary for Children to attend to the counſel of their Parents. But the youth of our age, ſet up for wiſdom the quite contrary way, and think they then become wits, when they are advanced to the deſpiſing the counſel, yea, mocking the perſons of their Parents. Let ſuch, if they will not practiſe the exhortations, yet remember the threatning of the Wiſe man, *Prov.* 30. 17. *The eye that mocketh his father and deſpiſeth to obey his mother, the Ravens of the valley ſhall pick it out, and the young Eaglet ſhall eat it.*

13. A

13. A ſecond duty we owe to them is Love; we are to bear them a real kindneſs, ſuch as may make us heartily deſirous of all manner of good to them, and abhor to do any thing that may grieve and diſquiet them. This will appear but common gratitude, when 'tis remembred what our Parents have done for us, how they were not only the inſtruments of firſt bringing us into the World, but alſo of ſuſtaining and ſupporting us after; and certainly they that rightly weigh the cares and fears, that go to the bringing up of a Child, will judge the love of that Child to be but a moderate return for them. This love is to be expreſt ſeveral ways, firſt, in all kindneſs of behaviour, carrying our ſelves not only with an awe and reſpect, but with kindneſs and affection, and therefore moſt gladly and readily doing thoſe things, which may bring joy and comfort to them, and carefully avoiding whatever may grieve and afflict them. Secondly, this love is to be expreſt in praying for them. The debt a Child ows to a Parent is ſo great, that he can never hope himſelf to diſcharge it, he is therefore to call in God's aid, to beg of him, that he will reward all the good his Parents have done for him, by multiplying his bleſſings upon them; what ſhall we then ſay to thoſe Children, that inſtead of calling to Heaven for bleſſings on their Parents, ranſack Hell for curſes on them, and pour out the blackeſt execrations againſt them? This is a thing ſo horrid, that one would think they needed no perſwaſion againſt it; becauſe none could be ſo vile, as to fall into it: but we ſee God himſelf, who beſt *Love.*

beſt knows Mens hearts, ſaw it poſſible, and therefore laid the heavieſt puniſhment upon it, *He that curſeth Father or Mother let him die the death, Exod.* 21. 17. And alas! our daily experience tells us, 'tis not only poſſible but common, even this of uttering curſes. But 'tis to be feared, there is another yet more common, that is, the wiſhing curſes, though fear or ſhame keep them from ſpeaking out. How many Children are there, that either through impatience of the Government, or greedineſs of the poſſeſſions of the Parents, have wiſht their deaths? but whoever doth ſo, let him remember, that how ſliely and fairly ſoever he carry it before Men, there is one that ſees thoſe ſecreteſt wiſhes of his heart, and in his ſight he aſſuredly paſſes for this hainous offender, a curſer of his Parents. And then let it be conſidered, that God hath as well the power of puniſhing, as of ſeeing, and therefore ſince he hath pronounced death to be the reward of that ſin, 'tis not unreaſonable to expect he may himſelf inflict it; that they who watch for the death of their Parents, may untimely meet with their own. The fifth Commandment promiſeth long life as the reward of honouring the Parent, to which 'tis very agreeable that untimely death be the puniſhment of the contrary, and ſure there is nothing more highly contrary to that duty, than this we are now ſpeaking of, the curſing our Parents.

Obedience.

14. The third duty we owe to them is Obedience; This is not only contained in the fifth Commandment, but expreſly enjoyned in other places of Scrip-

Scripture, *Ephes.* 6. 1. *Children obey your Parents in the Lord, for this is right*; and again, *Col.* 3. 20. *Children obey your Parents in all things, for this is well-pleasing to the Lord.* We owe them an obedience in all things, unless where their commands are contrary to the commands of God, for in that case our duty to God must be preferred; and therefore if any Parent shall be so wicked, as to require his Child to steal, to lie, or to do any unlawful thing, the Child then offends not against his duty, though he disobey that command, nay, he must disobey, or else he offends against a higher duty, even that he owes to God his Heavenly Father. Yet when 'tis thus necessary to refuse obedience, he should take care to do it in such a modest, and respectful manner, that it may appear 'tis conscience only, and not stubbornness moves him to it. But in case of all lawful commands; that is, when the thing commanded is either good, or not evil, when it hath nothing in it contrary to our duty to God, there the Child is bound to obey, be the command in a weightier or lighter matter. How little this duty is regarded is too manifest every where in the World, where Parents generally have their Children no longer under command, than they are under the rod; when they are once grown up, they think themselves free from all obedience to them; or if some do continue to pay it, yet let the motive of it be examined, and 'twill in too many be found only Worldly prudence, they fear to displease their Parents, lest they should shorten their hand towards them, and so they shall lose some-

what

what by it; but how few are there that obey purely upon conſcience of duty? This ſin of Diſobedience to Parents was by the Law of *Moſes* puniſhable with death, as you may read *Deut.* 21. 18. but if Parents now adays ſhould proceed ſo with their children, many might ſoon make themſelves childleſs.

Eſpecially in their Marriage.

15. But of all the acts of diſobedience, that of marrying againſt the conſent of the Parent, is one of the higheſt. Children are ſo much the Goods, the Poſſeſſions of their Parent, that they cannot without a kind of theft, give away themſelves without the allowance of thoſe that have the right in them: and therefore we ſee under the Law, the *Maid that had made any vow, was not ſuffered to perform it, without the conſent of the Parent*, *Numb.* 30. 5. The right of the Parent was thought of force enough to cancel and make void the Obligation even of a vow, and therefore ſurely it ought to be ſo much conſidered by us as to keep us from making any ſuch, whereby that right is infringed.

Miniſtring to their wants.

16. A fourth duty to the Parent, is to aſſiſt and miniſter to them in all their wants of what kind ſoever, whether weakneſs and ſickneſs of body, decayedneſs of underſtanding, or poverty and lowneſs in eſtate; in all theſe the Child is bound, according to his ability, to relieve and aſſiſt them: for the two former, weakneſs of body, and infirmity of mind, none can doubt of the duty, when they remember how

how every Child did in his infancy receive the very ſame benefit from the Parents; the Child had then no ſtrength to ſupport, no underſtanding to guide it ſelf; the care of the Parents was fain to ſupply both theſe to it, and therefore in common gratitude, whenever either of theſe becomes the Parents caſe, as ſometimes by great age, or ſome accident both do, the Child is to perform the ſame offices back again to them. As for that of relieving their poverty, there is the very ſame Obligation to that with the former, it being but juſt to ſuſtain thy Parent who has formerly ſuſtained thee: but beſides this, Chriſt himſelf teaches us, that this is contained within the precept of honouring their Parents; for when *Mark* 7. 13. he accuſes the *Phariſees* of *rejecting the Commandment of God, to cleave to their own traditions*, he inſtances in this particular concerning the relieving of Parents, whereby 'tis manifeſt that this is a part of that duty which is enjoyned in the fifth Commandment, as you may ſee at large in the Text, and ſuch a duty it is that no pretence can abſolve, or acquit us of it. How then ſhall thoſe anſwer it, that deny relief to their poor Parents, that cannot part with their own exceſſes and ſuperfluities, which are indeed their ſins, to ſatisfie the neceſſities of thoſe to whom they owe their being? Nay, ſome there are yet worſe, who out of pride ſcorn to own their Parents in their poverty: thus it often happens, when the Child is advanced to dignity or wealth, they think it a diſparagement to them to look on their Parents that remain in a low condition, it being the betraying

ing

ing, as they think, to the World the meanneſs of their birth; and ſo the poor Parent fares the worſe for the proſperity of his Child. This is ſuch a pride and unnaturalneſs together, as will ſurely find a ſharp vengeance from God; for if *Solomon* obſerve of Pride alone, that it is the *forerunner of deſtruction*, *Prov.* 16. 18. we may much rather conclude ſo of it, when it is thus accompanied.

Duty to be paid even to the worſt of Parents.

17. To this that hath been ſaid of the duty of Children to their Parents, I ſhall add only this; that no unkindneſs, no fault of the Parent, can acquit the Child of this duty; but as S. *Peter* tells ſervants, 1 *Pet.* 2. 18. that they *muſt be ſubject, not only to the good and gentle Maſters, but alſo to the froward*; ſo certainly it belongs to Children to perform duty, not only to the kind and virtuous, but even to the harſheſt, and wickedeſt Parent. For though the gratitude due to a kind Parent, be a very forcible motive to make the Child pay his duty, yet that is not the only nor chiefeſt ground of it; that is laid in the Command of God, who requires us thus to honour our Parents. And therefore though we ſhould ſuppoſe a Parent ſo unnatural, as never to have done any thing to oblige the Child (which can hardly be imagined) yet ſtill the Command of God continues in force, and we are in conſcience of that, to perform that duty to our Parents, though none of the other tye of gratitude ſhould lye on us.

But

But as this is due from the child to the Parents, ſo on the other ſide there are other things alſo due from the Parents to the Child, and that throughout the ſeveral ſtates and Ages of it. *Duty of Parents to Children.*

18. Firſt, There is the care of nouriſhing and ſuſtaining it, which begins from the very birth, and continues a duty from the Parent, till the Child be able to perform it to himſelf; this is a duty which nature teaches; even the ſavage beaſts have a great care and tenderneſs in nouriſhing their young, and therefore may ſerve to reproach and condemn all Parents, who ſhall be ſo unnatural as to neglect this. I ſhall not here enter into the queſtion, *Whether the Mother be obliged to give the child its firſt nouriſhment, by giving it Suck her ſelf,* becauſe 'twill not be poſſible to affirm univerſally in the Caſe, there being many circumſtances which may alter it, and make it not only lawful, but beſt not to do it; all I ſhall ſay is, that where no impediment of ſickneſs, weakneſs, or the like does happen, 'tis ſurely beſt for the Mother her ſelf to perform this office, there being many advantages to the Child by it, which a good Mother ought ſo far to conſider, as not to ſell them to her own ſloth, or niceneſs, or any ſuch unworthy motive; for where ſuch only are the grounds of forbearing it, they will never be able to juſtifie the omiſſion, they being themſelves unjuſtifiable. *To nouriſh them.*

But

Bring them to Baptism.

But besides this first care, which belongs to the body of the Child, there is another, which should begin near as early, which belongs to their Souls, and that is the bringing them to the Sacrament of Baptism, thereby to procure them an early right to all those precious advantages, which that Sacrament conveighs to them. This is a duty the Parents ought not to delay, it being most reasonable, that they who have been instruments to conveigh the stain and pollution of sin to the poor Infant, should be very earnest and industrious to have it washt off, as soon as may be: Besides, the life of so tender a creature is but a blast, and many times gone in a moment; and though we are not to despair of God's mercy to those poor Children, who die without Baptism, yet surely those Parents commit a great fault by whose neglect it is that they want it.

Educate them.

19. Secondly, the Parents must provide for the Education of the Child; they must, as *Solomon* speaks, *Prov.* 22. 6. *Train up the child in the way he should go.* As soon therefore as Children come to the use of reason, they are to be instructed, and that first in those things which concern their eternal well being, they are by little and little to be taught all those things which God hath commanded them as their duty to perform; as also what glorious rewards he hath provided for them, if they do it, and what grievous and eternal punishment, if they do it not. These things ought as early as is possible, to be instilled into the minds of Children, which (like new vessels)

veſſels) do uſually keep the ſavour of that which is firſt put into them; and therefore it nearly concerns all Parents to look they be at firſt thus ſeaſoned with Vertue and Religion. 'Tis ſure if this be neglected, there is one ready at hand to fill them with the contrary: the Devil will be diligent enough to inſtil into them all wickedneſs and vice, even from their cradles, and there being alſo in all our natures ſo much the greater aptneſs to evil, than to good, there is need of great care and watchfulneſs to prevent thoſe endeavours of that enemy of Souls, which can no way be, but by poſſeſſing them at firſt with good things, breeding in them a love to vertue, and a hatred of vice; that ſo when the temptations come, they may be armed againſt them. This ſurely is above all things the duty of Parents to look after, and the neglect of it is a horrible cruelty; we juſtly look upon thoſe Parents, as moſt unnatural wretches, that take away the life of their Child; but alas! that is mercy and tenderneſs, compared to this of neglecting his education, for by that he ruines his Soul, makes him miſerable eternally; and God knows multitudes of ſuch cruel Parents there are in the World, that thus give up their Children to be poſſeſt by the Devil, for want of an early acquainting them with the ways of God; nay indeed, how few there are that do conſcionably perform this duty, is too apparent by the ſtrange rudeneſs and ignorance that is generally among youth; the Children of thoſe who call themſelves Chriſtians, being frequently as ignorant of God and Chriſt, as the meereſt Heathens. But whoever

whoever they are that thus neglect this great duty, let them know that it is not only a fearful misery they bring upon their poor Children, but also a horrible guilt upon themselves. For as God says to the careless Watchman, *Ezek.* 3. 18. *That if any soul perish* by his negligence, *that soul shall be required at his hands*; so surely will it fare with all Parents who have this office of Watchmen intrusted to them by God over their own Children. A second part of education is the bringing them up to some imployment, busying them in some honest exercise, whereby they may avoid that great snare of the Devil, Idleness; and also be taught some useful Art or Trade, whereby when they come to age, they may become profitable to the Commonwealth, and able to get an honest living to themselves.

Means towards the education of Children.

20. To this great duty of Educating of Children there is required as means, first, Encouragement; secondly, Correction. Encouragement is first to be tried, we should endeavour to make children in love with duty, by offering them rewards and invitations, and whenever they do well, take notice of it, and encourage them to go on. It is an ill course some Parents hold, who think they must never appear to their Children but with a face of sowreness and austerity; this seems to be that which S. *Paul* forewarns Parents of, when he bids *fathers* not to *provoke their children to wrath*, *Col.* 3. 21. To be as harsh and unkind to them, when they do well, as if they do ill, is the way to provoke them; and then the Apostle tells

us

us in the ſame Verſe, what will be the iſſue of it, they will be diſcouraged, they will have no heart to go on in any good courſe, when the Parent affords them no countenance. The ſecond means is correction, and this becomes ſeaſonable, when the former will do no good, when all fair means, perſwaſions, and encouragements prevail not, then there is a neceſſity of uſing ſharper; and let that be firſt tried in words, I mean not by railing and foul language, but in ſober, yet ſharp reproof; but if that fail too, then proceed to blows; and in this caſe, as *Solomon* ſays, *He that ſpareth his rod hateth his ſon, Prov.* 13. 24. 'Tis a cruel fondneſs, that to ſpare a few ſtripes at preſent, will adventure him to thoſe ſad miſchiefs, which commonly befal the Child that is left to himſelf. But then this correction muſt be given in ſuch a manner, as may be likely to do good; to which purpoſe it muſt firſt be given timely; the Child muſt not be ſuffered to run on in any ill, till it hath got a habit, and a ſtubbornneſs too. This is a great error in many Parents, they will let their Children alone for divers years, to do what they liſt, permit them to lie, to ſteal, without ever ſo much as rebuking them, nay, perhaps pleaſe themſelves to ſee the witty ſhifts of the Child, and think it matters not what they do while they are little: but alas! all that while the Vice gets root, and that many times ſo deep an one, that all they can do afterwards, whether by words or blows, can never pluck it up. Secondly, Correction muſt be moderate, not exceeding the quality of the fault, nor the tenderneſs of the Child. Thirdly, it muſt

muſt not be given in rage, if it be, it will not only be in danger of being immoderate, but it will loſe its effects upon the Child, who will think he is corrected, not becauſe he has done a fault, but becauſe his Parent is angry, and ſo will rather blame the Parent than himſelf: whereas on the contrary care ſhould be taken to make the Child as ſenſible of the fault, as of the ſmart, without which he will never be throughly amended.

The Parent to watch over their Souls even when they are grown up.

21. Thirdly, after children are grown up, and are paſt the age of education, there are yet other Offices for the Parent to perform to them; the Parent is ſtill to watch over them, in reſpect of their ſouls, to obſerve how they practiſe thoſe precepts which are given them in their education, and accordingly to exhort, incourage, or reprove, as they find occaſion.

To provide for their ſubſiſtence.

22. So alſo for their outward eſtate, they are to put them into ſome courſe of living in the World; if God have bleſt the Parents with wealth, according to what he hath, he muſt diſtribute to his Children, remembring that ſince he was the inſtrument of bringing them into the World, he is, according to his ability, to provide for their comfortable living in it; they are therefore to be lookt on as very unnatural Parents, who, ſo they may have enough to ſpend in their own riots and exceſs, care not what becomes of their Children, never think of providing for them.

Another

Another fault is usual among Parents in this business: they defer all the provisions for them, till themselves be dead, heap up, perhaps, great matters for them against that time, but in the mean time afford them not such a competency, as may enable them to live in the world. There are several mischiefs come from this: First, it lessens the childs affection to his Parent, nay, sometimes it proceeds so far, as to make him wish his death: which though it be such a fault, as no temptation can excuse in a child, yet 'tis also a great fault in a Parent, to give that temptation. Secondly, it puts the child upon shifts and tricks, many times dishonest ones, to supply his necessities; this is, I doubt not, a common effect of it, the hardness of Parents has often put Men upon very unlawful courses, which when they are once acquainted with, perhaps they never leave, though the first occasion cease; and therefore Parents ought to beware how they run them upon those hazards. Besides, the Parent loses that contentment, which he might have in seeing his children live prosperously and comfortably, which none but an arrant Earth-worm would exchange for the vain imaginary pleasure of having money in his chest. But in this business of providing for children, there is yet another thing to be heeded, and that is, that the Parent get that wealth honestly, which he makes their portion; else 'tis very far from being a provision: there is such a curse goes along with an ill gotten estate, that he that leaves such a one to his child, doth but cheat and deceive him; makes him believe he has left him wealth, but has withal put such a canker in the bowels

of it, that is ſure to eat it out. This is ſo common an obſervation, that I need ſay nothing to confirm the truth of it; would God it were as generally laid to heart, as it ſeems to be generally taken notice of: Then ſurely Parents would not account it a reaſonable motive to unjuſt dealing, that they may thereby provide for their children, for this is not a way of providing for them; nay, 'tis the way to ſpoil them of whatever they have lawfully gathered for them; the leaſt mite of unlawful gain being of the nature of leaven, which ſowres the whole lump, bringing down curſes upon all a Man poſſeſſeth. Let all Parents therefore furniſh themſelves with ſuch proviſions for their children, as God ſhall enable them honeſtly to make, aſſuring themſelves how little ſoever it be, 'tis a better portion than the greateſt wealth unjuſtly gotten; according to that of *Solomon*, *Prov.* 16. 8. *Better is a little with righteouſneſs, than great revenues without right.*

To give them good example.

23. A fourth thing the Parent owes to the child is Good Example; he is not only to ſet him rules of vertue and godlineſs, but he muſt himſelf give him a pattern in his own practice. We ſee the force of example is infinitely beyond that of precept, eſpecially where the perſon is one to whom we bear a reverence, or with whom we have a continual converſation; both which uſually meet in a Parent. It is therefore a moſt neceſſary care in all Parents to behave themſelves ſo before their children, that their example may be a means of winning them to vertue. But alas! this age affords little of this care, nay, ſo far 'tis from

from it, that there are none more frequently the inſtruments of corrupting children, than their own Parents. And indeed how can it be otherwiſe? While Men give themſelves liberty to all wickedneſs, 'tis not to be hoped, but that the children which obſerve it, will imitate it; the child that ſees his Father drunk, will ſurely think he may be ſo too, as well as his father. So he that hears him ſwear, will do the like, and ſo for all other vices; and if any Parent that is thus wicked himſelf, ſhould happen to have ſo much more care of his childs Soul than his own, as to forbid him the things which himſelf practiſes, or correct him for the doing them; 'tis certain the child will account this a great injuſtice in his father, to puniſh him for that which himſelf freely does, and ſo he is never likely to be wrought upon by it. This conſideration lays a moſt ſtrict tie upon all Parents to live Chriſtianly, for otherwiſe they do not only hazard their own Souls, but thoſe of their children alſo, and as it were, purchaſe an eſtate of inheritance in Hell.

24. A fifth duty of Parents is bleſſing their children; the way of doing that is double, firſt, by their prayer; they are by daily and earneſt prayers to commend them to God's protection and bleſſing, both for their ſpiritual and temporal eſtate; and ſecondly, by their piety; they are to be ſuch perſons themſelves as that a bleſſing may deſcend from them upon their poſterity. This is often promiſed in Scripture to Godly men, that their *ſeed ſhall be bleſſed*. Thus in the ſecond Commandment, God promiſes *to ſhew mercy to the thouſandth* *To bleſs them.*

generation of them that love him and keep his Commandments. And it is very observable in the *Jews*, that though they were a stiff-necked generation, and had very grievously provoked God, yet the Godliness of their Forefathers, *Abraham*, *Isaac* and *Jacob* did many times move God to save them from destruction; and on the other side, we see that even good men have fared the worse for the iniquities of their fathers; thus when *Josiah* had destroyed idolatry, restored Gods service, and done good beyond all the Kings that were before him, yet there was an old arrear of *Manasseh* his Grandfather, which all this piety of his would not blot out, but he resolves to cast *Judah also out of his sight*, as you may read at large, 2 *Kings* 23. If therefore Parents have any bowels, any kindness towards their children, any real desire of their prosperity, let them take care by their own godly life to entail a blessing upon them.

To give no unreasonable commands.

25. Sixthly, Parents must take heed, that they use their power over their children with equity and moderation, not to oppress them with unreasonable Commands, only to exercise their own authority, but in all things of weight to consider the real good of their children, and to press them to nothing which may not consist with that. This is a rule whereof Parents may often have use, but in none greater than in the business of marrying their children, wherein many that otherwise are good Parents, have been to blame; when out of an eagerness of bestowing them wealthily, they force them to marry utterly against their own inclinations,

ons; which is a great tyranny, and that which frequently betrays them to a multitude of miſchiefs, ſuch as all the wealth in the world cannot repair. There are two things which Parents ought eſpecially to conſider in the matching their children; the firſt, how they may live Chriſtianly; and to that purpoſe to chuſe a vertuous and pious perſon to link them with; the ſecond is, how they may live chearfully and comfortably in this world; and to that end, though a competency of eſtate may be neceſſary to be regarded, yet ſurely abundance is no way requiſite, and therefore that ſhould not be too vehemently ſought after: that which much more tends to the happineſs of that ſtate, is the mutual kindneſs and liking of the parties, without which marriage is of all other the moſt uncomfortable condition, and therefore no Parent ought to thruſt a child into it. I have now done with the firſt ſort of Relation, that of a Parent.

SUNDAY XV.

Of duty to our Brethren, and Relations, Husband, Wife, Friends, Maſters, Servants.

Sect. 1. *Dues to Brethren.*

THE ſecond ſort of Relation is that of a Brother: now brotherhood may be twofold, either natural, or ſpiritual; the latter may in the largeſt extent contain under it all Mankind, all that partake of the ſame nature; but I ſhall not conſider it ſo in this place, having already mentioned thoſe general duties which belong to all as ſuch. I now ſpeak of that natural brotherhood that is between thoſe that are the children of the ſame immediate Parent; and the duty of theſe is to have united hearts and affections: this nature points out to them, they partaking in a more ſpecial manner of each others ſubſtance, and therefore ought to have the greateſt tenderneſs and kindneſs, each to other; thus we ſee *Abraham* makes it an argument, why there ſhould be *no contention between him and Lot, becauſe they were brethren, Gen.* 13.8 And though by brethren there is meant only couſins, yet that helps the more ſtrongly to conclude, that this nearer

Natural.

nearer relation is in reaſon to be a greater bar to ſtrife, as alſo that this kindneſs is in ſome degree to be extended to all that have any nearneſs of bloud to us

2. This kindneſs and Love between Brethren and Siſters ought to be very firmly grounded in their hearts; if it be not, they will be of all others in moſt danger of diſagreeing; for the continual converſation that is amongſt them whileſt they are at home in the fathers houſe will be apt to miniſter ſome occaſion of jar. Beſides the equality that is among them in reſpect of birth, often makes them inclinable to envy each other, when one is in any reſpect advanced above the other. Thus we ſee *Joſephs* brethren envied him, becauſe he had moſt of his fathers love, and *Rachel* envied her ſiſter *Leah*, becauſe ſhe was fruitful; therefore for the preventing of ſuch temptations, let all who have brethren and ſiſters, poſſeſs their mind with a great and real kindneſs to them, look on them as parts of themſelves, and then they will never think fit either to quarrel with them, or to envy them any advantage, any more than one part of the body does another of the ſame body, but will ſtrive to advance and help forward the good of each other.

The neceſſity of Love among Brethren.

3. The ſecond kind of Brotherhood is ſpiritual; that contains all thoſe who profeſs the ſame Faith with us: the Church in our Baptiſm becomes a Mother to each baptized perſon; and then ſurely they that have the relation of

Spiritual brotherhood.

children to her, must have also the relation of brethren to each other; and to this sort of brethren also we owe a great deal of tenderness and affection; the spiritual bond of Religion should, of all others, the most closely unite our hearts. This is the Brotherhood which S. *Peter* exhorts us to love, 1 *Pet.* 2. 17. And to it we are in an especial manner bound to do all good offices, *Do good*, saith the Apostle, *to all, but especially to them that are of the houshold of Faith*, *Gal.* 6. 10. Our compassions are to be most melting towards them of all others, in all their needs; Christ tells us, that *whosoever gives but a cup of cold water to any in the name of a Disciple, shall not lose his reward*, *Matth.* 10. 42. From whence we may assure our selves that this peculiar love to Christians as Christians, is very acceptable in his sight.

Our duty to hold communion with these brethren.

4. Several duties there are required of us to these brethren: one principal, is the holding Communion with them, and that first in Doctrine: we are constantly to continue in the belief and profession of all those necessary truths, by which we may be mark'd out as followers and Disciples of Christ. This is that faith which S. *Jude* speaks of, which was *once delivered to the Saints*, *Jude* 3. by keeping whereof we continue still united to this spiritual brotherhood, in respect of profession, which we must constantly do, what storms and persecutions soever attend it, according to the exhortation of the Apostle, *Heb.* 10. 22. *Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering.* Secondly, we are also, as opportunity

portunity ſerves, to communicate with them in all holy offices; we muſt be diligent in frequenting the aſſemblies of the Saints, which is as it were the badge of our profeſſion, and therefore he that willingly withdraws himſelf from theſe, gives ground to ſuſpect he will be apt to renounce the other alſo. But theſe parts of communion we find ſtrictly maintained by the firſt Chriſtians, *Acts* 2. 42. *They continued ſtedfaſtly in the Apoſtles doctrine and fellowſhip, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.* They continued, and that ſtedfaſtly, they were not frightned from it by any perſecutions, though that were a time wherein they were tried with the ſharpeſt ſufferings; which may teach us that it is not the danger that attends this duty can acquit us of it.

To bear with their Infirmities.

5. Secondly, We are to bear with the infirmities of our Chriſtian brethren, according to the advice of S. *Paul*, *Rom.* 15. 1. *We that are ſtrong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak.* If one that holds all neceſſary Chriſtian truths, happen yet to be in ſome error, we are not for this, either to forſake his communion, or deſpiſe his perſon. This S. *Paul* teaches us in the caſe of that weak brother, *who by error made a cauſleſs ſcruple about meats*, *Rom* 14. where he bids the ſtronger Chriſtians, that is, thoſe who being better inſtructed, diſcerned him to be in an error, yet to receive him nevertheleſs, and not to deſpiſe him; as on the other ſide, he bids that weak one not to judge the ſtronger. The leſſer differences in opinion muſt be born with on both

ſides, and muſt not in the leaſt abate our brotherly charity towards each other.

To reſtore them after falls.

6. Thirdly, We are to endeavour the reſtoring of any fallen brother, that is, to bring him to repentance, after he hath fallen into any ſin. Thus St. *Paul* commands the *Galatians*, that they ſhould *reſtore him that was overtaken in a fault, conſidering themſelves leſt they were alſo tempted.* We are not to look on him as a caſt-away, to give him over as utterly deſperate, neither are we to triumph over him, in reſpect of our own innocence, like the proud *Phariſee* over the poor *Publican*, *Luke* 18. 11. but we are meekly to endeavour his recovery, remembring that our own frailty is ſuch, that we are not ſecure from the like falls.

To ſympathize with them.

7. Fourthly, We are to have a Sympathy and fellow-feeling with theſe brethren, to be nearly toucht with whatſoever befals them, either as they are conſidered in ſociety or in ſingle perſons. In ſociety firſt, and ſo they make up a Church; and that either the univerſal, which is made up of all Believers throughout the World, or any particular Church, which is made up of all the Believers in that particular Nation; and whatever happens to either of theſe, either the whole Church in general, or any ſuch ſingle part of it, eſpecially that whereof our ſelves are members, we are to be much affected and moved with it, to rejoyce in all the proſperities, and to mourn and bewail all the breaches and deſolations thereof, and daily

daily and earneſtly to pray with *David*, Pſal. 51. 18. *O be favourable and gracious unto* Sion, *build thou the walls of* Jeruſalem; and that eſpecially when we ſee her in diſtreſs, and perſecution. Whoſoever is not thus toucht with the condition of the Church, is not to be lookt on as a living member of it; for as in the natural body every member is concerned in the proſperity of the whole, ſo certainly 'tis here; It was the obſervation of the Pſalmiſt, that *Gods ſervants think upon the ſtones of* Sion, *and pity to ſee her in the duſt*, *Pſalm* 102. 14. and ſurely all his ſervants are ſtill of the ſame temper, cannot look on the ruines and deſolations of the Church, without the greateſt ſorrow, and lamentation. Secondly, we are to have this fellow-feeling with our brethren, conſidered as ſingle perſons; We are to account our ſelves concerned in every particular Chriſtian, ſo as to partake with him in all his occaſions either of joy or ſorrow. Thus the Apoſtle exhorts, *Rom.* 12. 14. *Rejoyce with them that rejoyce, weep with them that weep:* And again, 1 *Cor.* 12. under the ſimilitude of the natural body he urges this duty. *Whether one member ſuffer, all the members ſuffer with it; or one member be honoured, all the members rejoyce with it.* All theſe ſeveral effects of love, we owe to theſe ſpiritual brethren. And this love is that, which Chriſt hath made the badge of his Diſciples, *John* 13. 35. *By this ſhall all men know that ye are my Diſciples, if ye have love one to another*; ſo that if we mean not to caſt off diſcipleſhip to Chriſt, we muſt not forſake this love of the brethren.

3. The

The wife ows to the Husband obedience.

8. The third relation is that between Husband and Wife: This is yet much nearer than either of the former, as appears by that Text, *Ephes.* 5. 31. *A man shall leave Father and Mother, and cleave to his Wife, and they two shall be one flesh.* Several duties there are owing from one of these persons to the other: and first for the Wife, she ows obedience. This is commanded by the Apostle, *Col.* 3. 18. *Wives submit your selves to your own Husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.* They are to render obedience to their Husbands in the Lord, that is, in all lawful commands, for otherwise 'tis here, as in the case of all other superiours, God must be obeyed rather than Man, and the Wife must not upon her Husbands command do any thing which is forbidden by God. But in all things which do not cross some command of God's, this Precept is of force, and will serve to condemn the pevish stubbornness of many wives who resist the lawful commands of their husband, only because they are impatient of this duty of subjection, which God himself requires of them. But it may here be asked, What if the Husband command something, which though it be not unlawful, is yet very inconvenient, and imprudent, must the wife submit to such a command? To this I answer, that it will be no disobedience in her, but duty, calmly and mildly to shew him the inconveniences thereof, and to perswade him to retract that command: but in case she cannot win him to it by fair intreaties, she must neither try sharp language, nor

nor yet finally refuſe to obey, nothing but the unlawfulneſs of the command being ſufficient warrant for that.

9. Secondly, The wife ows Fidelity to the husband, and that of two ſorts; firſt, that of the bed, ſhe muſt keep her ſelf pure and chaſte from all ſtrange embraces, and therefore muſt not ſo much as give an ear to any that would allure her, but with the greateſt abhorrence reject all motions of that ſort, and never give any Man that has once made ſuch a motion to her, the leaſt opportunity to make a ſecond. Secondly, She ows him likewiſe Fidelity in the managing thoſe worldly affairs he commits to her, ſhe muſt order them ſo, as may be moſt to her husbands advantage; and not by deceiving and couzening of him employ his goods to ſuch uſes as he allows not of. *Fidelity.*

10. Thirdly, She ows him Love, and together with that all friendlineſs and kindneſs of converſation: ſhe is to endeavour to bring him as much aſſiſtance, and comfort of life, as is poſſible, that ſo ſhe may anſwer that ſpecial end of the womans creation, the being *a help to her husband*, *Gen.* 2. 13. and this in all conditions, whether health or ſickneſs, wealth or poverty, whatſoever eſtate God by his providence ſhall caſt him into, ſhe muſt be as much of comfort and ſupport to him, as ſhe can. To this all ſullenneſs and harſhneſs, all brawling and unquietneſs is directly contrary, for that makes the wife the burden and plague of the man, inſtead of a help and comfort: And *Love.*

ſure

ſure if it be a fault to behave ones ſelf ſo to any perſon, as hath already been ſhewed, how great muſt it be to do ſo to him, to whom the greateſt kindneſs and affection is owing?

The faults of the Husband acquit not from theſe duties.

11. Nor let ſuch wives think that any faults, or provocations of the Husband can juſtifie their frowardneſs; for they will not, either in reſpect of religion or diſcretion. Not in Religion, for where God has abſolutely commanded a duty to be paid, 'tis not any unworthineſs of the perſon can excuſe from it; nor in Diſcretion, for the worſe a Husband is, the more need there is for the wife to carry her ſelf with that gentleneſs and ſweetneſs, that may be moſt likely to win him. This is the advice Saint *Peter* gave the Wives of his time, 1 *Pet.* 3. 1. *Likewiſe ye wives be in ſubjection to your own husbands, that if any obey not the word, they may without the word be won by the converſation of the wives.* It ſeems the good behaviour of the wives was thought a powerful means to win Men from Heatheniſm to Chriſtianity; and ſure it might now a-days have ſome good effects, if women would have but the patience to try it: At the leaſt, 'twould have this, that it would keep ſome tolerable quiet in Families, whereas on the other ſide, the ill fruits of the wives unquietneſs are ſo notorious, that there are few neighbourhoods, but can give ſome inſtance of it. How many men are there, that to avoid the noiſe of a froward wife, have fallen to company-keeping, and by that to drunkenneſs, poverty, and a multitude

multitude of miſchiefs? Let all Wives therefore beware of adminiſtring that temptation. But whenever there happens any thing, which, in kindneſs to her husband, ſhe is to admoniſh him of, let it be with that ſoftneſs and mildneſs, that it may appear 'tis love, and not anger that makes her ſpeak.

The Husband ows to the wife love.

12. There are alſo on the Husbands part ſeveral duties; there is firſt Love, which St. *Paul* requires to be very tender and compaſſionate towards the wife, as appears by the ſimilitudes he uſeth in that matter, *Epheſ* 5. The one, that of the love a man bears to his natural body. *No man*, ſays he, Verſe 29. *ever hateth his own fleſh but nouriſheth it, and cheriſheth it.* The other love is that Chriſt bears to his Church; which is far greater, verſe 25. both which he ſets as patterns of this love of Husbands towards their Wives. This utterly forbids all harſhneſs and roughneſs to them; Men are to uſe them as parts of themſelves, to love them as their own bodies, and therefore to do nothing that may be hurtful and grievous to them, no more than they would cut and gaſh their own fleſh. Let thoſe husbands that tyranize over their wives, that ſcarce uſe them like humane creatures, conſider whether that be to love them as their own bodies.

Faithfulneſs.

13. A ſecond duty of the Husband, is Faithfulneſs to the Bed. This is by God as well required of the Husband, as the Wife; and though the world do ſeem to look on the breach

of

of this duty with leſs abhorrence in the Husband, yet ſure before that juſt Judge, the offence will appear no leſs on the Man's ſide, than the Woman's. This is certain, 'tis in both a breach of the vow made to each other at their Marriage, and ſo beſides the uncleanneſs, a down-right perjury, and thoſe differences in the caſe, which ſeem to caſt the ſcale, are rather in reſpect of civil and worldly conſideration, than merely of the ſin.

Maintenance.

14. A third part of the Husband is to maintain and provide for the Wife. He is to let her partake with him in thoſe outward good things, wherewith God hath bleſt him, and neither by niggardlineſs debar her of what is fit for her, nor yet by unthriftineſs ſo waſte his goods, that he ſhall become unable to ſupport her. This is certainly the duty of the Husband, who being as hath been ſaid, to account his wife as a part of his own body, muſt have the very ſame care to ſuſtain her, that he hath for himſelf. Yet this is not ſo to be underſtood, as to excuſe the wife from her part of labour and induſtry, when that is requiſite, it being unreaſonable the husband ſhould toil to maintain the wife in idleneſs.

Inſtruction.

15. Fourthly, The husband is to inſtruct the wife, in the things which concern her eternal welfare, if ſhe be ignorant of them. Thus S. *Paul* bids the *wives learn of their husbands at home*, 1 Cor. 14. 36. which ſuppoſes that the husband is to teach her. Indeed it belongs to every Maſter of a Family to endeavour that all under his charge be taught

taught all neceſſary things of this kind, and then ſure more eſpecially his wife, who is ſo much nearer to him than all the reſt. This ſhould make men careful to get knowledge themſelves, that ſo they may be able to perform this duty they owe to others.

16. Laſtly, Husbands and Wives are mutually to pray for each other, to beg all bleſſings from God both ſpiritual and temporal, and to endeavour all they can to do all good to one another, eſpecially all good to each others Souls, by ſtirring up to the performance of duty, and diſſwading and drawing back from all ſin, and by being like true yoke-fellows, helpful and aſſiſtant to each other in the doing of all ſorts of Good, both to their own Family and all others within their reach. This is of all other the trueſt and moſt valuable love. Nay, indeed, how can it be ſaid they do love at all, who contentedly let each other run on in a courſe that will bring them to eternal miſery? And if the love of Husbands and Wives were thus grounded in vertue and Religion, 'twould make their lives a kind of Heaven on earth; 'twould prevent all thoſe contentions and brawlings, ſo common among them, which are the great plagues of Families, and the leſſer Hell in paſſage to the greater; and truly where it is not thus founded, there is little comfort to be expected in marriage.

Husbands and Wives mutually to pray for, and aſſiſt each other in all good.

17. It

The vertue of the person the chief consideration in Marriage.

17. It should therefore be the care of every one that means to enter upon that state, to consider advisedly beforehand, and to chuse such a person with whom they may have this spiritual friendship, that is, such a one, as truly fears God. There are many false ends of Marriage lookt upon in the world: some marry for Wealth, others for Beauty, and generally they are only worldly respects that are at all considered; but certainly he that would marry as he ought, should contrive to make his Marriage useful to those better ends of serving God, and saving his own Soul; at least he must be sure it be no hindrance to them, and to that purpose the vertue of the person chosen is more conducing than all the wealth in the world, though I deny not, but that a competency of that may likewise be considered.

Unlawful Marriages.

18. But above all things let all take heed, that they make not such marriages, as may not only be ill in their effects, but are actual sins at the time; such are the marriages of those that were formerly promised to some other, in which case 'tis sure they rightly belong to those, to whom they past the first promise; and then for any other to marry them, during the life of that person, is to take the husband or wife of that other, which is direct adultery, as St. *Paul* tells us, *Rom.* 7. 3. The like unlawfulness there is also in the marriage of those, who are within those degrees of kindred forbidden

forbidden by God, the particulars whereof are ſet down in the 18. and 20. of *Levit.* and whoever marries any that is within any of thoſe degrees of nearneſs, either to himſelf, or to his deceaſed wife, which is as bad, commits that great ſin of Inceſt, and ſo long as he continues to live with ſuch his unlawful wife, remains in that fearful guilt. This wariness in the choice of the Perſon to be married, would prevent many ſad effects, which we daily ſee follow ſuch raſh or unlawful matches. It were well therefore if People would look on marriage, as our Church adviſes, as a thing not to be *undertaken lightly, unadviſedly, or wantonly, to ſatisfie mens carnal luſts and appetites; but reverently, diſcreetly, advisedly, ſoberly, and in the fear of God*; and in ſo doing, no doubt, a bleſſing would follow, which otherwiſe there is little ground to expect. I have now done with this Relation between Husband and Wife.

19. The next is that between Friends; and this relation if it be rightly founded, is of great nearneſs and uſefulneſs; but there is none more generally miſtaken in the world; Men uſually call them their friends, with whom they have an intimacy and frequency of converſation, though that intimacy be indeed nothing but an agreement and combination in ſin. The Drunkard thinks him his friend that will keep him company; the deceitful Perſon, him that will aid him in his cheats, the proud Man, him that will flatter him: And ſo generally in all vices, they are look'd on as friends that advance *Friendſhip.*

and

and further us in them. But God knows this is far from friendſhip; ſuch a friend as this, the Devil himſelf is in the higheſt degree, who is never backward in ſuch offices. The true friendſhip is that of a direct contrary making; 'tis a concurrence and agreement in vertue, not in vice: in ſhort, a true friend loves his friend ſo, that he is very zealous of his good; and certainly he that is really ſo, will never be the inſtrument of bringing him to the greateſt evil. The general duty of a friend then muſt be reſolved to be the induſtrious purſuit of his friends real advantages, in which there are ſeveral particulars contained.

Its duties.

Faithfulneſs.

20. As firſt faithfulneſs in all truſts committed to him by his friend, whether that of goods, or ſecrets; he that betrays the truſt of a friend in either, is by all men lookt upon with abhorrence, it being one of the higheſt falſeneſſes and treacheries, and for ſuch treacherous wounds the Wiſe man tells us, *Every friend will depart*, Eccluſ. 22. 22.

Aſſiſtance.

21. Secondly, 'tis the duty of a Friend to be aſſiſting to his friend in all his outward needs; to counſel him when he wants advice: to chear him when he needs comfort: to give him when he wants relief: and to endeavour his reſcue out of any trouble or danger. An admirable example we have of this friendſhip in *Jonathan* to *David*, *he loved him as his own ſoul*, and we ſee he not only contrives for his ſafety when he was in danger,

danger, but runs hazards himſelf to reſcue and deliver his friend, draws his fathers anger upon him, to turn it from *David*, as you may read at large, 1 *Sam.* 20.

22. The third and higheſt duty of a friend is to be aiding and aſſiſting to the ſoul of his friend, to endeavour to advance that in piety and vertue by all means within his power, by exhortations and incouragements to all vertue, by earneſt and vehement diſſwaſions from all ſin, and not only thus in general, but by applying to his particular wants, eſpecially by plain and friendly reproofs, where he knows or reaſonably believes there is any fault committed. This is of all others the moſt peculiar duty of a friend, it being indeed that which none elſe is qualified for. Such an unwillingneſs there is in moſt men to hear of their faults, that thoſe that undertake that work, had need have a great prepoſſeſſion of their hearts, to make them patient of it. Nay, it is ſo generally acknowledged to be the proper work of a friend, that if he omit it, he betrays the offender into ſecurity; his not reproving will be apt to make the other think he does nothing worthy of reproof, and ſo he tacitly acts that baſeſt part of a flatterer, ſooths and cheriſhes him in his ſin. When yet farther it is conſidered how great need all men have at ſome time or other of being admoniſhed, 'twill appear a moſt unfriendly, yea, a cruel thing to omit it. We have that natural partiality to our ſelves, that we cannot ſo readily diſcern our own miſcarriages, as we do other mens, and therefore 'tis *Admonition.*

'tis very neceſſary they ſhould ſometimes be ſhewed us by thoſe, who ſee them more clearly; and the doing this at the firſt may prevent the multiplying of more: whereas if we be ſuffered to go unreproved, it often comes to ſuch a habit, that reproofs will do no good. And then how ſhall that perſon be able to anſwer it either to God or himſelf, that has by his ſilence betrayed his friend to this greateſt miſchief? 'Tis the expreſſion of God himſelf ſpeaking of a friend, *Thy friend which is as thine own ſoul, Deut.* 13. 6. And ſure we ſhould in this reſpect account our friends as our own ſouls, by having the ſame jealous tenderneſs and watchfulneſs over their ſouls, which we ought to have of our own. It will therefore be very fit for all that have entred any ſtrict friendſhip, to make this one ſpecial article in the agreement, that they ſhall mutually admoniſh and reprove each other; by which means it will become ſuch an avowed part of their friendſhip, that it can never be miſtaken by the reproved party for cenſoriouſneſs or unkindneſs.

Prayer. 23. Fourthly, to theſe ſeveral parts of kindneſs muſt be added that of Prayer; we muſt not only aſſiſt our friends, our ſelves, in what we can, but we muſt call in the Almighties aid to them, recommending them earneſtly to God for all his bleſſings, both temporal and ſpiritual.

Conſtancy. 24. Laſtly, We muſt be conſtant in our friendſhips, and not out of a lightneſs of humour grow weary of a friend, only becauſe we have had him long.

This is great injuſtice to him, who, if he have behaved himſelf well, ought the more to be valued, by how much the longer he has continued to do ſo: And it is a great folly in our ſelves, for it is the caſting away the greateſt treaſure of humane life, for ſuch certainly is a tried friend. The wiſeſt of Men gives warning of it, *Prov.* 27. 16. *Thine own friend, and thy fathers friend forſake not.* Nay, farther, 'tis not every light offence of a friend, that ſhould make thee renounce his friendſhip, there muſt be ſome allowance made to the infirmities of Men, and if thou haſt occaſion to pardon him ſomewhat to day, perhaps thou mayeſt give him opportunity to requite thee to morrow; therefore nothing but unfaithfulneſs, or incorrigible vice ſhould break this band.

Servants owe to their Maſters obedience.

15. The laſt relation is that between Maſters and Servants, both which owe duty to each other. That of the ſervant is firſt obedience to all lawful commands; this is expreſly required by the Apoſtle, *Epheſ.* 6. 6. *Servants obey in all things your Maſters*, &c. And this obedience muſt not be a grumbling and unwilling one, but ready and chearful, as he there proceeds to exhort, Verſe 7. *with good will doing ſervice*; and to help them herein, they are to conſider, that it is to the Lord, and not unto Men God has commanded ſervants thus to obey their Maſters; and therefore the obedience they pay is to God, which may well make them do it chearfully, how harſh or unworthy ſoever the Maſter be, eſpecially

especially if what the Apostle farther urgeth, Verse 8. be considered, *That there is a reward to be expected from God for it.*

Fidelity.

26. The second duty of the Servant is faithfulness, and that may be of two sorts; one as opposed to eye-service, the other to purloyning or defrauding. The first part of faithfulness is the doing of all true service to his Master, not only when his eye is over him, and he expects punishment for the omission, but at all times, even when his Master is not likely to discern his failing; and that servant that doth not make conscience of this, is far from being a faithful servant, this eye-service being by the Apostle set opposite to that singleness of heart, which he requires of servants, *Eph.* 6. 5. The second sort of faithfulness consists in the honest managery of all things intrusted to him by his Master, the not wasting his goods (as the unjust Steward was accused to have done, *Luke* 16.) whether by careless embezelling of them, or by converting any of them to his own use without the allowance of his Master. This latter is that purloining of which the Apostle warns servants, *Tit.* 2. 10. and is indeed no better than arrant theft; of this kind are all those ways, that the servant hath of gaining to himself by the loss and damage of his Master, as the being bribed to make ill bargains for him, and many the like: Nay, indeed this sort of unfaithfulness is worse than common theft, by how much there is a greater trust reposed, the betraying whereof adds to the crime. As for the other sort of unfaithfulness, that of wasting,

waſting, though without gain to themſelves, it differs not much in effect from this, the Maſter may loſe as much by the one as the other, and then what odds is it to him, whether he be robb'd by the covetouſneſs or negligence of his Servant? And it is ſtill the ſame breach of truſt with the former; for every Maſter is ſuppoſed to intruſt his affairs as well to the care as the honeſty of his ſervant: for 'twould be little advantage to the Maſter to be ſecured that his ſervant would not himſelf cheat him, whilſt in the mean time he would by his careleſneſs give opportunity to others to do it: therefore he that does not carefully look to his Maſters profit, deceives his truſt, as well as he that unjuſtly provides for his own.

Submiſſion to rebuke.

27. A third duty of a ſervant is patience and meekneſs under the reproofs of his Maſter, *not anſwering again*, as the Apoſtle exhorts, *Tit.* 2. 9. that is, not making ſuch ſurly and rude replies, as may increaſe the Maſters diſpleaſure, a thing too frequent among ſervants, even in the juſteſt reprehenſions; whereas S. *Peter* directs them patiently to ſuffer even the moſt undeſerved correction, even when they *do well and ſuffer for it*, 1 *Pet.* 2. 20. But the patient ſuffering of rebuke is not all that is required of ſervants in this matter, they muſt alſo mend the fault they are rebuked for, and not think they have done enough, when they have (though never ſo dutifully) given the Maſter the hearing.

Diligence.

28. A fourth duty of a ſervant is Diligence: he muſt conſtantly attend to all thoſe things, which are the duties of his place, and not give himſelf to idleneſs and ſloth, nor yet to company-keeping, gaming, or any other diſorderly courſe, which may take him off from his Maſters buſineſs. All theſe are neceſſary duties of a ſervant, which they are carefully and conſcionably to perform, not ſo much to eſcape the Maſters anger as Gods, who will certainly call every one of them to an account, how they have behaved themſelves towards their earthly Maſters.

Maſters owe to their Servants Juſtice.

29. Now on the other ſide there are ſome things alſo owing from the Maſters to their ſervants: As firſt the Maſter is bound to be juſt to them, in performing thoſe conditions on which they were hired: ſuch are commonly the giving them food and wages, and that Maſter that withholds theſe, is an oppreſſor.

Admonition.

30. Secondly, The Maſter is to admoniſh and reprove the Servant in caſe of fault, and that not only in faults againſt them, wherein few Maſters are backward; but alſo and more eſpecially in faults againſt God, whereat every Maſter ought to be more troubled than at thoſe which tend only to his own loſs, or inconvenience; the diſhonour of God, and the hazard of the meaneſt Man's ſoul, being infinitely more worthy our diſquiet, than any thing of the other kind can be. And therefore when Maſters are preſently

preſently on fire for any little negligence or fault of a ſervant towards themſelves, and yet can without trouble ſee them run into the greateſt ſins againſt God, 'tis a ſign they conſider their own concernments too much, and God's glory and their ſervants ſouls too little. This is too commonly the temper of Maſters, they are generally careleſs how their ſervants behave themſelves towards God, how diſordered and prophane their families are, and therefore never beſtow any exhortation, or admonition to perſwade them to vertue, or draw them from vice, ſuch Maſters forget that they muſt one day give an account how they have governed their families. It is certainly the duty of every Ruler to endeavour to advance Piety and Godlineſs among all thoſe that are under his charge, and that as well in this leſſer dominion of a family, as in the greater of a Realm or Nation. Of this *David* was ſo careful that we ſee he profeſſes, *Pſalm* 101. 7. *That no deceitful perſon ſhould dwell in his houſe, that he that told lies ſhould not tarry in his ſight*; ſo much he thought himſelf bound to provide, that his family might be a kind of Church, an Aſſembly of godly upright perſons: and if all Maſters would endeavour to have theirs ſo, they would beſides the eternal reward of it hereafter, find a preſent benefit by it, their worldly buſineſs would thrive much the better; for if their ſervants were brought to make conſcience of their ways, they would then not dare either to be negligent or falſe.

31. But as it is the duty of Maſters to admoniſh and reprove their ſervants, ſo they muſt

also look to do it in a due manner, that is, so as may be most likely to do good, not in passion and rage, which can never work the servant to any thing but the despising or hating him; but with such sober and grave speeches, as may convince him of his fault, and may also assure him, that it is a kind desire of his amendment (and not a willingness to wreck his own rage) which makes the Master thus to rebuke him.

Good example.

32. A third duty of the Master is to set good example of honesty and godliness to his servants, without which 'tis not all the exhortations or reproofs he can use, will ever do good; or else he pulls down more with his example, than 'tis possible for him to build with the other; and 'tis madness for a drunken, or prophane Master to expect a sober and godly Family.

Means of Instruction.

33. Fourthly, The Master is to provide that his servants may not want means of being instructed in their duty, as also that they may daily have constant times of worshipping God publickly, by having prayers in the family: but of this I have spoken before under the head of Prayer, and therefore shall here say no more of it.

Moderation in Commands.

34. Fifthly, The Master in all affairs of his own, is to give reasonable and moderate Commands, not laying greater burdens on his servants than they are able to bear, particularly not requiring so much work, that they shall have no time to bestow on their souls;

as

as on the other side he is not to permit them to live so idly as may make them either useless to him, or may betray themselves to any ill.

35. Sixthly, The Master is to give his servants encouragement in well-doing, by using them with that bounty and kindness which their faithfulness, and diligence, and piety deserves; and finally in all his dealing with them, he is to remember that himself hath, as the Apostle saith, *Ephes.* 6 9. *a Master in Heaven,* to whom he must give an account of the usage of his meanest servant on Earth. Thus have I briefly run through those several relations, to which we owe particular Duty, and so have done with that first branch of Duty to our Neighbours, that of Justice. *Encouragement in well-doing.*

SUNDAY XVI.

Other Branches of our Duty to our Neighbor. Of Charity to mens Souls, Bodies, Goods and Credit.

Sect. 1. THE second branch of Duty to our Neighbours, is Charity, or Love. This is the great Gospel-duty so often enjoyned us by Christ; the *New Commandment,* as himself calls it, *John* *Charity.*

13. 34. *that ye love one another*, and this is again repeated twice in one Chapter, *John* 15. 12. 17. and the first Epistle of S. *John* is almost wholly spent in the perswasion of this one duty, by which we may see it is no matter of indifference, but most strictly required of all that profess Christ. Indeed himself has given it as the badge and livery of his Disciples, *John* 13. 35. *By this shall all men know ye are my Disciples, if ye have love one to another.*

In the Affections.

This Charity may be considered two ways; first, in respect of the Affections; secondly, of the Actions. Charity in the affections is a sincere kindness, which disposes us to wish all good to others, and that in all their capacities, in the same manner that justice obligeth us to wish no hurt to any Man, in respect either of his Soul, his Body, his Goods, or his Credit; so this first part of Charity binds us to wish all good to them in all these.

To mens Souls.

And first for the Soul. If we have any the least spark of Charity, we cannot but wish all good to Mens Souls; those precious things which Christ thought worth the ransoming with his own bloud, may surely well challenge our kindness and good wishes; and therefore if we do not thus love one another, we are far from obeying that Command of loving as he hath loved; for 'twas the Souls of Men which he loved so tenderly, and both did and suffered so much for. Of this love of his to Souls there are two great and special effects: the first, the purifying

rifying them here by his grace, the ſecond, the making them everlaſtingly happy in his glory; and both theſe we are ſo far to copy out in our kindneſs, as to be earneſtly deſirous that all Men ſhould arrive to that purity and holineſs here, which may make them capable of eternal happineſs hereafter. It were to be hoped, that none, that himſelf carried a Soul about him, could be ſo cruel to that of another Mans, as not ſincerely to wiſh this, did not experience ſhew us there are ſome perſons, whoſe malice is ſo deviliſh, as to reach even to the direct contrary; the wiſhing not only the ſin, but the damnation of others. Thus may you have ſome, who, in any injury or oppreſſion they ſuffer, make it their only comfort, that their enemies will damn themſelves by it; when alas! that ſhould to a Chriſtian be much more terrible, than any ſuffering they could bring upon him. He that is of this temper, is a Diſciple of Satan, not of Chriſt, it being directly contrary to the whole ſcope of that grand Chriſtian precept, of *loving our neighbours as our ſelves* For it is ſure, no Man that believes there is ſuch a thing as damnation, wiſhes it to himſelf; be he never ſo fond of the ways that lead to it, yet he wiſhes that may not be his journeys end; and therefore by that rule of Charity ſhould as much dread it for his Neighbour.

Secondly, We are to wiſh all good to the Bodies of Men, all health and welfare; we are generally tender enough of our own bodies, dread the leaſt pain or

To their Bodies, Goods and Credit.

ill, that can befall them: Now Charity, by vertue of the forementioned precept, extends this tenderneſs to all others: and whatever we apprehend as grievous to our ſelves, we muſt be unwilling ſhould befal another. The like is to be ſaid of the other two, goods and credit, that as we wiſh our own thriving and reputation, ſo we ſhould likewiſe that of others, or elſe we can never be ſaid to *love our neighbour as our ſelves.*

Effects of this Charity. This Charity of the affections, if it be ſincere, will certainly have theſe ſeveral effects, which are ſo inſeparable from it, that they are often in Scripture accounted as parts of the duty, and ſo moſt ſtrictly required of us; Firſt, it will keep the mind in a peaceable and meek temper towards others, ſo far from ſeeking occaſion of contentions, that no provocation ſhall draw us to it; for where we have kindneſs we ſhall be unapt to quarrel, it being one of the ſpecial qualities of Charity, that it is *not eaſily provoked*, 1 *Cor.* 13. 5. And therefore whoever is unpeaceable, ſhews his heart is deſtitute of this Charity. Secondly, it will breed compaſſion toward all the miſeries of others; every miſ-hap that befals where we wiſh well, is a kind of defeat and diſaſter to our ſelves; and therefore if we wiſh well to all, we ſhall be thus concerned in the calamities of all, have a real grief and ſorrow to ſee any in miſery, and that according to the proportion of the ſuffering. Thirdly, it will give us joy in the proſperities of others. *Solomon* obſerves, *Prov.* 13. 19.

19. that *the deſire accompliſht is ſweet to the Soul*; and then whoever has this real deſire of his neighbours welfare, his deſire is accompliſhed in their proſperity, and therefore he cannot but have contentment and ſatisfaction in it. Both theſe are together commanded by S. *Paul*, Rom. 12. 12. *Rejoyce with them that rejoyce, weep with them that weep.* Fourthly, it will excite and ſtir up our prayers for others; we are of our ſelves impotent, feeble creatures, unable to beſtow bleſſings, where we moſt wiſh them; therefore if we do indeed deſire the good of others, we muſt ſeek it on their behalf from him, whence every *good and perfect gift cometh*, James 1. 17. This is ſo neceſſary a part of Charity, that without it our kindneſs is but an inſignificant thing, a kind of empty complement. For how can he be believed to wiſh well in earneſt, who will not thus put life and efficacy into his wiſhes by forming them into prayers, which will otherwiſe be vain and fruitleſs? The Apoſtle thought not fit to leave Men to their bare wiſhes, but exhorts that ſupplications, prayers and giving of thanks *be made for all men*, 1 *Tim.* 2. 1. which precept all that have this true charity of the heart will readily conform to. Theſe ſeverals are ſo naturally the fruits of this Charity, that it is a deceit for any Man to perſwade himſelf he hath it, who cannot produce theſe fruits to evidence it by.

But there is yet a farther excellency of this grace; it guards the mind, and ſecures it from ſeveral great and dangerous vices; as firſt

It caſts out Envy.

from Envy: this is by the Apoſtle taught us to be the property of Charity, 1 *Cor.* 13. 4. *Charity envyeth not*; and indeed common reaſon may confirm this to us, for envy is a ſorrow at the proſperity of another, and therefore muſt needs be directly contrary to that deſire of it, which we ſhewed before was the effect of love; ſo that if love bear ſway in the heart, 'twill certainly chaſe out Envy. How vainly then do thoſe pretend to this vertue, that are ſtill grudging, and repining at every good hap of others?

Pride. Secondly, It keeps down Pride and Haughtineſs. This is alſo taught us by the Apoſtle in the forementioned place. *Charity vaunteth not it ſelf, is not puffed up*; and accordingly we find, that where this vertue of love is commanded, there humility is joyned with it. Thus it is, *Col.* 3. 12. *Put on therefore bowels of Mercies, Kindneſs, Humbleneſs of mind*, and *Rom.* 12. 10. *Be kindly affectioned one towards another with brotherly love, in honour preferring one another*, where you ſee how cloſe an attendant Humility is of love. Indeed it naturally flows from it, for love always ſets a price and value upon the thing beloved, makes us eſteem and prize it; thus we too conſtantly find it in ſelf-love, it makes us think highly of our ſelves, that we are much more excellent than other Men. Now if love thus plac'd on our ſelves, beget pride, let us but divert the courſe, and turn this love on our brethren, and it will as ſurely beget humility, for then we ſhould ſee and value thoſe gifts and excellencies of theirs, which now our pride, or our hatred make us to overlook and neglect,

neglect, and not think it reasonable either to despise them, or vaunt and magnifie our selves upon such a comparison; we should certainly find cause to put the Apostles exhortation in practice, *Phil.* 2. 4. That we should *esteem others better than our selves.* Whoever therefore is of so haughty a temper, as to vilifie and disdain others, may conclude, he hath not this charity rooted in his heart.

Censoriousness.

Thirdly, It casts out censoriousness and rash judging; Charity, as the Apostle saith, 1 *Cor.* 13. 5. *thinketh no evil*; is not apt to entertain ill conceits of others, but on the contrary, as it follows, Verse 7. *Believeth all things, hopeth all things*; that is, it is forward to believe and hope the best of all Men; and surely our own experience tells us the same, for where we love we are usually unapt to discern faults, be they never so gross (witness the great blindness we generally have towards our own) and therefore shall certainly not be like to create them, where they are not, or to aggravate them beyond their true size and degree: And then to what shall we impute those unmerciful censures and rash judgments of others, so frequent among Men, but to the want of this Charity?

Dissembling.

Fourthly, It casts out Dissembling and feigned kindness; where this true and real love is, that false and counterfeit one flies from before it, and this is the love we are commanded to have, such as *is without dissimulation*, *Rom.* 12. 9. Indeed where this is rooted in the heart, there can

be

be no poſſible uſe of diſſimulation: becauſe this is in truth all that the falſe one would ſeem to be, and ſo is as far beyond it as nature is beyond Art; nay indeed as a divine vertue is beyond a foul ſin; for ſuch is that hypocritical kindneſs; and yet 'tis to be feared, that does too generally uſurp the place of this real charity; the effects of it are too viſible among us, there being nothing more common than to ſee Men make large profeſſions to thoſe whom as ſoon as their backs are turned they either deride or miſchief.

Self-ſeeking.

Fifthly, It caſts out all mercenarineſs and ſelf-ſeeking: 'tis of ſo noble and generous a temper, that it deſpiſes all projectings for gain or advantage, *Love ſeeketh not her own*, 1 *Cor.* 13. 5. And therefore that huckſtering kind of love ſo much uſed in the World, which places it ſelf only there where it may fetch in benefit, is very far from this charity.

Revenge.

Laſtly, It turns out of the heart all malice and deſire of Revenge, which is ſo utterly contrary to it, that it is impoſſible they ſhould both dwell in the ſame breaſt; 'tis the property of love to *bear all things*, 1 *Cor.* 13. 7. to endure the greateſt injuries, without thought of making any other return to them than prayers and bleſſings, and therefore the malicious revengeful perſon is of all others the greateſt ſtranger to this charity.

This charity to be extended even to enemies.

'Tis true, if this vertue were to be exerciſed but towards ſome ſort of perſons, it might conſiſt with malice

to

to others, it being poſſible for a Man that bitterly hates one to love another: but we are to take notice that this Charity muſt not be ſo confined, but muſt extend and ſtretch it ſelf to all Men in the World, particularly to Enemies, or elſe it is not that divine Charity commended to us by Chriſt. The loving of friends and benefactors is ſo low a pitch, that the very Publicans and ſinners, the worſt of Men were able to attain to it, *Matth.* 5. 46. And therefore 'tis not counted rewardable in a Diſciple of Chriſt; no, he expects we ſhould ſoar higher, and therefore hath ſet us this more ſpiritual and excellent precept of loving of enemies, *Matth.* 4. 44. *I ſay unto you, love your enemies, bleſs them that curſe you, and pray for them that deſpitefully uſe you, and perſecute you,* and whoſoever does not thus, will never be owned by him for a Diſciple. We are therefore to conclude, that all which hath been ſaid concerning this Charity of the Affections, muſt be underſtood to belong as well to our ſpiteffulleſt enemy, as our moſt obliging friend. But becauſe this is a duty to which the froward nature of Man is apt to object much, 'twill not be amiſs to inſiſt a little on ſome conſiderations which may enforce it on us.

Motives thereunto. Command of Chriſt.

And firſt, conſider what hath been already toucht on, that it is the Command of Chriſt, both in the Texts above mentioned, and multitudes of others; there being ſcarce any precept ſo often repeated in the New Teſtament, as this of loving and forgiving of our enemies. Thus, *Epheſ.* 4. 32.

Be

Be ye kind one to another, tender-hearted, forgiving one another; And again, *Col.* 3. 13. *Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any, even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.* So also 1 *Pet.* 3. 9. *Not rendring evil for evil, nor railing for railing, but contrariwise Blessings.* A whole Volume of Texts might be brought to this purpose, but these are certainly enough to convince any Man, that this is strictly required of us by Christ, and indeed I think, there are few that ever heard of the Gospel, but know it is so. The more prodigiously strange is it, that Men that call themselves Christians, should give no degree of obedience to it, nay, not only so, but even publickly avow, and profess the contrary, as we daily see they do, it being ordinary to have Men resolve, and declare that they will not forgive such, or such a Man, and no consideration of Christ's command can at all move them from their purpose. Certainly these Men understand not what is meant by the very word Christian, which signifies a servant and disciple of Christ, and this Charity is the very badge of the one, and lesson of the other: and therefore 'tis the greatest absurdity, and contradiction, to profess themselves Christians, and yet at the same time to resist this so express Command of that Christ, whom they own as their Master. *If I be a Master*, saith God, *where is my fear?* *Mal.* 1. 6. Obedience and reverence are so much the duties of servants, that no Man is thought to look on him as a Master, to whom he pays them not. *Why call ye me Lord, Lord, and do not the things I say?* saith Christ,

Luke

Luke 6. 46. The whole World is divided into two great Families, Chriſts and Satans, and the obedience each Man pays, ſignifies to which of theſe Maſters he belongs; if he obey Chriſt, to Chriſt; if Satan, to Satan. Now this ſin of malice and revenge is ſo much the dictate of that wicked ſpirit, that there is nothing can be a more direct obeying of him; 'tis the taking his livery on our backs, the proclamation whoſe ſervants we are. What ridiculous impudence is it then, for Men that have thus entred themſelves of Satan's Family, to pretend to be the ſervants of Chriſt? Let ſuch know aſſuredly, that they ſhall not be owned by him, but at the great day of Accompt, be turned over to their proper Maſter, to receive their wages in fire and brimſtone.

A ſecond conſideration is the example of God; this is an argument Chriſt himſelf thought fit to uſe, to impreſs this duty on us, as you may ſee, *Luke* 6. 35, 36. Where after having given the Command of Loving Enemies, he encourages to the practice of it, by telling that it is that which will make us the *Children of the Higheſt* (that is, 'twill give us a likeneſs and reſemblance to him, as Children have to their Parents) *for he is kind to the unthankful and the evil*; and to the ſame purpoſe you may read *Matth.* 5. 45. *He maketh his ſun to riſe on the evil and on the good, and ſendeth rain on the juſt and on the unjuſt*; and ſure this is a moſt forcible conſideration to excite us to this duty. God, we know, is the fountain of perfection, and the being *Example of God.*

Be ye kind one to another, tender-hearted, forgiving one another; And again, *Col.* 3. 13. *Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any, even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.* So also 1 *Pet.* 3. 9. *Not rendring evil for evil, nor railing for railing, but contrariwise Blessings.* A whole Volume of Texts might be brought to this purpose, but these are certainly enough to convince any Man, that this is strictly required of us by Christ, and indeed I think, there are few that ever heard of the Gospel, but know it is so. The more prodigiously strange is it, that Men that call themselves Christians, should give no degree of obedience to it, nay, not only so, but even publickly avow, and profess the contrary, as we daily see they do, it being ordinary to have Men resolve, and declare that they will not forgive such, or such a Man, and no consideration of Christ's command can at all move them from their purpose. Certainly these Men understand not what is meant by the very word Christian, which signifies a servant and disciple of Christ, and this Charity is the very badge of the one, and lesson of the other: and therefore 'tis the greatest absurdity, and contradiction, to profess themselves Christians, and yet at the same time to resist this so express Command of that Christ, whom they own as their Master. *If I be a Master*, saith God, *where is my fear*? *Mal.* 1. 6. Obedience and reverence are so much the duties of servants, that no Man is thought to look on him as a Master, to whom he pays them not. *Why call ye me Lord, Lord, and do not the things I say*? saith Christ,

Luke

Luke 6. 46. The whole World is divided into two great Families, Christs and Satans, and the obedience each Man pays, signifies to which of these Masters he belongs; if he obey Christ, to Christ; if Satan, to Satan. Now this sin of malice and revenge is so much the dictate of that wicked spirit, that there is nothing can be a more direct obeying of him; 'tis the taking his livery on our backs, the proclamation whose servants we are. What ridiculous impudence is it then, for Men that have thus entred themselves of Satan's Family, to pretend to be the servants of Christ? Let such know assuredly, that they shall not be owned by him, but at the great day of Accompt, be turned over to their proper Master, to receive their wages in fire and brimstone.

A second consideration is the example of God; this is an argument Christ himself thought fit to use, to impress this duty on us, as you may see, *Luke* 6. 35, 36. Where after having given the Command of Loving Enemies, he encourages to the practice of it, by telling that it is that which will make us the *Children of the Highest* (that is, 'twill give us a likeness and resemblance to him, as Children have to their Parents) *for he is kind to the unthankful and the evil*; and to the same purpose you may read *Matth.* 5. 45. *He maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust*; and sure this is a most forcible consideration to excite us to this duty. God, we know, is the fountain of perfection, and the being *Example of God.*

ing like to him, is the ſumm of all we can wiſh for; and though it was Lucifers fall, his Ambition to be like the moſt high, yet had the likeneſs he affected been only that of Holineſs and goodneſs, he might ſtill have been an Angel of light. This deſire of imitating our Heavenly Father is the eſpecial mark of a child of his. Now this kindneſs and goodneſs to enemies is moſt eminently remarkable in God, and that not only in reſpect of the temporal mercies, which he indifferently beſtows on all, his *ſun and rain on the unjuſt*, as in the text forementioned, but chiefly in his ſpiritual Mercies. We are all by our wicked works, *Col.* 1. 21. *Enemies to him*, and the miſchief of that enmity would have fallen wholly upon our ſelves. God had no motive beſides that of his pity to us, to wiſh a reconciliation; yet ſo far was he from returning our enmity, when he might have revenged himſelf to our eternal ruine, that he deſigns and contrives how he may bring us to be at peace with him. This is a huge degree of mercy and kindneſs, but the means he uſed for effecting this, is yet far beyond it, he ſent his own Son from Heaven to work it, and that not only by perſwaſions, but ſufferings alſo; ſo much did he prize us miſerable creatures, that he thought us not too dear bought with the bloud of his Son. The like example of mercy and patience we have in Chriſt, both in *laying down his life for us Enemies*, and alſo in that meek manner of doing it, which we find excellently ſet forth by the Apoſtle, 1 *Pet.* 2. 22, 23, 24. and commended to our imitation. Now ſurely when all this is conſidered, we may well

well make S. *John*'s inference; *Beloved if God ſo loved us, we ought alſo to love one another*, 1 *John* 4. 11. How ſhameful a thing is it for us to retain diſpleaſures againſt our brethren, when God thus lays by his towards us, and that when we have ſo highly provoked him?

The diſproportion between our offences againſt God, and mens againſt us.

This directs to a third conſideration, the comparing our ſins againſt God, with the offences of our brethren againſt us, which we no ſooner ſhall come to do, but there will appear a vaſt difference between them, and that in ſeveral reſpects: For firſt, there is the Majeſty of the Perſon againſt whom we ſin, which exceedingly encreaſes the guilt, whereas between Man and Man, there cannot be ſo great a diſtance; for though ſome Men are by God advanced to ſuch eminency of dignity as may make an injury offered to them the greater, yet ſtill they are but Men of the ſame nature with us, whereas he is God bleſſed for ever. Secondly, there is his ſoveraignty and power, which is original in God, for we are his creatures, we have received our whole being from him, and therefore are in the deepeſt manner bound to perfect obedience, whereas all the ſoveraignty that one Man can poſſibly have over another, is but imparted to them by God, and for the moſt part there is none of this neither in the caſe, quarrels being moſt uſual among equals. Thirdly, there is his infinite bounty and goodneſs to us; all that ever we enjoy, whether in relation to this life or a better,

better, being wholly his free gift, and ſo there is the fouleſt ingratitude added to our other crimes; in which reſpect alſo 'tis impoſſible for one Man to offend againſt another in ſuch a degree, for though one may be (and too many are) guilty of unthankfulneſs towards Men, yet becauſe the greateſt benefits that Man can beſtow, are infinitely ſhort of thoſe which God doth, the ingratitude cannot be near ſo great as towards God it is. Laſtly, there is the greatneſs and multitude of our ſins againſt God, which do infinitely exceed all that the moſt injurious Man can do againſt us; for we all ſin much oftner and more hainouſly againſt him, than any Man, be he never ſo malicious, can find opportunities of injuring his brethren. This inequality and diſproportion our Saviour intimates in the Parable, *Matth.* 18. where our offences againſt God are noted by the ten thouſand talents, whereas our brethrens againſt us are deſcribed by the hundred pence; a talent hugely out-weighs a penny, and ten thouſand out numbers a hundred, yet ſo and much more does the weight and number of our ſins exceed all the offences of others againſt us: Much more might be ſaid to ſhew the vaſt inequality between the faults which God forgives us, and thoſe we can poſſibly have to forgive our brethren: But this I ſuppoſe may ſuffice to ſilence all the objections of cruel and revengeful perſons, againſt this kindneſs to enemies. They are apt to look upon it as an abſurd and unreaſonable thing, but ſince God himſelf acts it in ſo much an higher degree, who can without blaſphemy ſay 'tis unreaſonable?

ſonable? If this, or any other ſpiritual duty appear ſo to us, we may learn the reaſon from the Apoſtle, 1 *Cor.* 2. 14. *The carnal man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are fooliſhneſs unto him*; 'tis the carnality and fleſhlineſs of our hearts that makes it ſeem ſo, and therefore inſtead of diſputing againſt the duty, let us purge our hearts of that, and then we ſhall find that true which the ſpiritual Wiſdom affirms of her Doctrines, *Prov.* 8. 9. *They are all plain to him that underſtandeth, and right to them that find knowledge.*

Pleaſantneſs of this Duty.

Nay, This loving of enemies is not only a reaſonable, but a pleaſant duty, and that I ſuppoſe as a fourth Conſideration; there is a great deal of ſweetneſs and delight to be found in it. Of this I confeſs none can ſo well judge as thoſe that have practiſed it, the nature even of earthly pleaſures being ſuch, that 'tis the enjoyment only that can make a Man truly know them. No Man can ſo deſcribe the taſte of any delicious thing to another, as that by it he ſhall know the reliſh of it; he muſt firſt actually taſte of it: and ſure 'tis no more ſo in ſpiritual pleaſures, and therefore he that would fully know the ſweetneſs and pleaſantneſs of this duty, let him ſet to the practice, and then his own experience will be the beſt informer. But in the mean time, how very unjuſt, yea, and fooliſh is it, to pronounce ill of it before trial? For men to ſay, This is irkſome and intolerable, who never ſo much as once offered to try whether indeed it were ſo or no? Yet by this very means

means an ill opinion is brought up of this moſt delightful duty, and paſſes currant among Men, whereas in all juſtice the teſtimony of it ſhould be taken only from thoſe who have tried it, and they would certainly give another account of it.

But though the full knowledge hereof be to be had only by this nearer acquaintance, yet methinks even thoſe who look at it but at a diſtance may diſcern ſomewhat of amiableneſs in it, if no other way, yet at leaſt by comparing it with the uneaſineſs of its contrary. Malice and revenge are the moſt reſtleſs, tormenting paſſions that can poſſeſs the mind of a Man, they keep Men in perpetual ſtudy and care how to effect their miſchievous purpoſes, it diſturbs their very ſleep, as *Solomon* obſerves, *Prov.* 4. 16. *They ſleep not except they have done miſchief, and their ſleep is taken away, except they cauſe ſome to fall:* Yea, it imbitters all the good things they enjoy, ſo that they have no taſte or reliſh of them. A remarkable example of this we have in *Haman*, who though he abounded in all the greatneſs and felicity of the World, yet the malice he had to a poor deſpicable Man, *Mordecai*, kept him from taſting contentment in all this, as you may ſee, *Eſther* 5. where after he had related to his friends all his proſperities, Verſe 11. he concludes thus, Verſe 12. *Yet all this availeth me nothing, ſo long as I ſee Mordecai the Jew ſitting in the Kings gate.* On the other ſide, the peaceable ſpirit, that can quietly paſs by all injuries and affronts, enjoys a continual calm, and is above the malice of his enemies; for let them do what they can, they cannot rob him of his quiet, he is firm as a rock, which

which no ſtorms or winds can move, when the furious and revengeful Man is like a Wave, which the leaſt blaſt toſſes and tumbles from its place. But beſides this inward diſquiet of revengeful Men, they often bring many outward calamities upon themſelves, they exaſperate their enemies, and provoke them to do them greater miſchiefs, nay, oftentimes they willingly run themſelves upon the greateſt miſeries in purſuit of their revenge, to which 'tis ordinary to ſee Men ſacrifice Goods, Eaſe, Credit, Life, nay, Soul it ſelf, not caring what they ſuffer themſelves, ſo they may ſpight their enemy; ſo ſtrangely does this wretched humor beſot and blind them. On the contrary the meek perſon he often melts his adverſary, pacifies his anger; *A ſoft anſwer turneth away wrath*, ſaith *Solomon*, *Prov.* 15. 1. And ſure there is nothing can tend more to that end; but if it do happen that his enemy be ſo inhumane, that he miſs of doing that, yet he is ſtill a gainer by all he can ſuffer. For firſt, he gains an opportunity of exerciſing that moſt Chriſtian grace of charity and forgiveneſs; and ſo at once of obeying the command, and imitating the example of his Saviour, which is to a true Chriſtian ſpirit a moſt valuable advantage; and then ſecondly, he gains an acceſſion and increaſe to his reward hereafter. And if it be objected, that that is not to be reckoned in to the preſent pleaſure of the duty: I anſwer, that the expectation and belief of it is, and that alone is a delight infinitely more raviſhing than the preſent enjoyment of all ſenſual pleaſure can be.

The

If we forgive not, God will not forgive us.

The fourth Conſideration is the Dangers of not performing this Duty, of which I might reckon up divers, but I ſhall inſiſt only upon that great one, which contains in it all the reſt, and that is the forfeiting of our own pardons from God, the having our ſins againſt him kept ſtill on his ſcore and not forgiven. This is a conſideration, that methinks ſhould affright us into good nature; if it do not, our malice is greater to our ſelves than to our enemies. For alas! what hurt is it poſſible for thee to do to another, which can bear any compariſon with that thou doſt thy ſelf, in loſing the pardon of thy ſins? which is ſo unſpeakable a miſchief, that the Devil himſelf with all his malice cannot wiſh a greater. 'Tis all he aims at, firſt, that we may ſin, and then that thoſe ſins may never be pardoned, for then he knows he has us ſure enough. Hell, and damnation being certainly the portion of every unpardoned ſinner, beſides all other effects of God's wrath in this life. Conſider this, and then tell me what thou haſt got by the higheſt revenge thou ever actedſt upon another. 'Tis a Deviliſh phraſe in the mouth of Men, *that revenge is ſweet:* but is it poſſible there can be (even to the moſt diſtemperate palate) any ſuch ſweetneſs in it, as may recompence that everlaſting bitterneſs that attends it? 'Tis certain no Man in his wits can upon ſober judging, imagine there is. But alas! we give not our ſelves time to weigh things, but ſuffer our ſelves to be hurried away with the heat of an angry humour, never

ver conſidering how dear we muſt pay for it: like the ſilly Bee, that in anger leaves at once her ſting and her life behind her; the ſting may perhaps give ſome ſhort pain to the fleſh it ſticks in, but yet there is none but diſcerns the Bee has the worſt of it, that pays her life for ſo poor a revenge: So it is in the greateſt act of our malice, we may perhaps leave our ſtings in others, put them to ſome preſent trouble, but that compared with the hurt redounds to our ſelves by it, is no more than that inconſiderable pain is to death; Nay, not ſo much, becauſe the miſchiefs that we bring upon our ſelves are eternal, to which no finite thing can bear any proportion. Remember then, whenſoever thou art contriving and plotting a revenge, that thou quite miſtakeſt the mark; thou thinkeſt to hit the enemy, and alas! thou woundeſt thy ſelf to death. And let no Man ſpeak peace to himſelf, or think that theſe are vain terrors, and that he may obtain pardon from God, though he give none to his Brethren. For he that is truth it ſelf has aſſured us the contrary, *Matth.* 6. 15. *If ye forgive not men their treſpaſſes, neither will your father forgive your treſpaſſes.* And leſt we ſhould forget the neceſſity of this duty, he has inſerted it in our daily Prayers, where we make it the condition, on which we beg pardon from God; *Forgive us our treſpaſſes, as we forgive them that treſpaſs againſt us.* What a heavy curſe then does every revengeful perſon lay upon himſelf, when he ſays this Prayer? He does in effect beg God not to forgive him; and 'tis too ſure that part of his Prayer will be heard, he ſhall be forgiven juſt

as

as he forgives, that is, not at all. This is yet farther ſet out to us in the Parable of the Lord and the Servant, *Matth.* 18. The ſervant had obtained of his Lord the forgiveneſs of a vaſt debt, ten thouſand talents, yet was ſo cruel to his fellow-ſervant, as to exact a poor trifling ſumm of a hundred pence, upon which his Lord recals his former forgiveneſs, and charges him again with the whole debt: and this Chriſt applies to our preſent purpoſe, Verſe 35. *So likewiſe ſhall my heavenly Father do unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every man his brother their treſpaſſes.* One ſuch act of uncharitableneſs is able to forfeit us the pardon God hath granted us, and then all our ſins return again upon us, and ſink us to utter ruine. I ſuppoſe it needleſs to heap up more teſtimonies of Scripture for the truth of this; theſe are ſo clear, as may ſurely ſerve to perſwade any Man, that acknowledges Scripture, of the great and fearful danger of this ſin of uncharitableneſs. The Lord poſſeſs all our hearts with ſuch a juſt ſenſe of it as may make us avoid it.

Gratitude to God.

The laſt conſideration I ſhall mention, is that of Gratitude. God has ſhewed wonderful mercies to us, Chriſt has ſuffered heavy things to bring us into a capacity of that mercy and pardon from God: and ſhall we not then think our ſelves obliged to ſome returns of thankfulneſs? If we will take the Apoſtles judgment, he tells us, 2 *Cor.* 5. 15. *That ſince Chriſt died for us all, 'tis but reaſonable that we ſhould not henceforth live unto our ſelves, but unto him*

that died for us. Indeed were every moment of our life consecrated to his immediate Service, were no more than common gratitude requires, and far less than such inestimable benefits deserve; what a shameful unthankfulness is it then to deny him so poor a satisfaction as this, the forgiving our brethren? Suppose a Man that were ransomed either from death or slavery, by the bounty and sufferings of another, should upon his release be charged by him that so freed him, in return of that kindness of his, to forgive some slighe debt, which was owning him by some third person, would you not think him the unthankfulleſt wretch in the World, that should refuse this so great a benefactor? Yet such a wretch and much worse is every revengeful person: Christ hath bought us out of eternal slavery, and that not with *corruptible things, as silver and gold*, 1 Pet. 1. 10. *but with his own most precious bloud*, and hath earnestly recommended to us the love of our brethren, and that with the most moving arguments, drawn from the greatness of his love to us, and if we shall obstinately refuse him in so just, so moderate a demand, how unspeakable a vileness is it? And yet this we do down-right, if we keep any malice or grudge to any person whatsoever. Nay farther, this is not barely an unthankfulness, but there is also joyned with it a horrible contempt and despising of him. This Peace and unity of brethren was a thing so much prized and valued by him, that when he was to leave the World, he thought it the most precious thing he could bequeath, and therefore left it by way of legacy

to his Diſciples, *John* 14.27. *Peace I leave with you.* We uſe to ſet a great value on the ſlighteſt bequeſts of our dead friends, to be exceeding careful not to loſe them; and therefore if we wilfully bangle away this ſo precious a Legacy of Chriſt, 'tis a plain ſign we want that love and eſteem of him, which we have of our earthly friends, and that we deſpiſe him as well as his Legacy. The great prevailing of this ſin of uncharitableneſs has made me ſtand thus long on theſe conſiderations, for the ſubduing it. *God grant they may make ſuch impreſſion on the Reader, as may be available to that purpoſe.*

I ſhall add only this one advice, that theſe, or whatſoever other remedies againſt this ſin, muſt be uſed timely: 'tis oft-times the fruſtrating of bodily medicines, the applying them too late; and 'tis much oftner ſo in ſpiritual: therefore if it be poſſible, let theſe and the like conſiderations be ſo conſtantly and habitually fixt in thy heart, that they may frame it to ſuch meekneſs, as may prevent all riſings of rancor or revenge in thee, for it is much better they ſhould ſerve as armour to prevent, than as balſom to cure the wound. But if this paſſion be not yet ſo ſubdued in thee, but that there will be ſome ſtirrings of it, yet then be ſure to take it at the very firſt riſe, and let not thy fancy chew, as it were, upon the injury by often rolling it in thy mind, but remember betimes the foregoing conſiderations, and withal, that this is a time and ſeaſon of trial to thee, wherein thou mayeſt ſhew thou haſt profited

The firſt riſing of rancor to be ſuppreſt.

profited in Christs School, there now being an opportunity offered thee either of obeying and pleasing God, by passing by this offence of thy brother, or else of obeying and pleasing Satan, that lover of discord, by nourishing hatred against him. Remember this, I say, betimes, before thou be inflamed, for if this fire be throughly kindled, it will cast such a smoak, as will blind thy reason, and make thee unfit to judge even in this so very plain a case, Whether it be better by obeying God, to purchase to thy self eternal bliss; or by obeying Satan, eternal torments. Whereas if thou put the question to thy self before this commotion, and disturbance of mind, 'tis impossible but thy understanding must pronounce for God; and then unless thou wilt be so perverse that thou wilt deliberately chuse death, thou wilt surely practise according to that sentence of thy understanding. I shall add no more on this first part of Charity, that of the Affections.

Charity in the Actions.

I proceed now to that of the Actions; And this indeed is it, whereby the former must be approved: we may pretend great charity within, but if none break forth in the Actions, we may say of that Love, as Saint *James* doth of the Faith he speaks of, *that it is dead*, *Jam.* 2. 20. It is the loving in Deed, that must *approve our hearts before God*, 1 *John* 3. 18. Now this love in the Actions may likewise fitly be distributed, as the former was, in relation to the four distinct capacities of our brethren, their Souls, their Bodies, their Goods and Credit.

Towards the mind of our Neighbour.

The Soul, I formerly told you, may be considered either in a Natural or Spiritual sence, and in both of them Charity binds us to do all the good we can. As the Soul signifies the Mind of a Man, so we are to endeavour the comfort and refreshment of our brethren, desire to give them all true cause of joy and chearfulness, especially when we see any under any sadness or heaviness, then to bring out all the cordials we can procure, that is, to labour by all Christian and fit means to chear the troubled spirits of our brethren; to *comfort them that are in any heaviness*, as the Apostle speaks, 2 *Cor.* 1. 4.

His Soul.

But the Soul in the spiritual sence, is yet of greater concernment, and the securing of that is a matter of much greater moment, than the refreshing of the mind only, in as much as the eternal sorrows and sadnesses of Hell exceed the deepest sorrows of this life; and therefore though we must not omit the former, yet on this we are to employ our most zealous charities; wherein we are not to content our selves with a bare wishing well to the Souls of our brethren, this alone is a sluggish sort of kindness unworthy of those who are to imitate the great Redeemer of Souls, who did and suffered so much in that purchase: No, we must add also our endeavour to make them that we wish them; to this purpose it were very reasonable to propound to our selves in all our conversings with others, that one great design of doing some good to their Souls. If this pur-

poſe were fixt in our minds, we ſhould then diſcern perhaps many opportunities, which now we overlook, of doing ſomething towards it. The brutiſh ignorance of one would call upon thee to endeavour his inſtruction; the open ſin of another, to reprehend and admoniſh him; the faint and weak virtue of another, to confirm and encourage him. Every ſpiritual want of thy brother may give thee ſome occaſion of exerciſing ſome part of this Charity: or if thy circumſtances be ſuch, that upon ſober judging, thou think it vain to attempt any thing thy ſelf, as if either thy meanneſs, or thy unacquaintedneſs, or any the like impediment be like to render thy exhortations fruitleſs, yet if thou art induſtrious in thy Charity, thou mayeſt probably find out ſome other inſtrument, by whom to do it more ſucceſsfully. There cannot be a nobler ſtudy than how to benefit mens Souls, and therefore where the direct means are improper, 'tis fit we ſhould whet our wits for attaining of others. Indeed 'tis a ſhame, we ſhould not as induſtriouſly contrive for this great ſpiritual concernment of others, as we do for every worldly trifling intereſt of our own; yet in them we are unwearied, and try one means after another, till we compaſs our end. But if after all our ſerious endeavours, the obſtinacy of Men do not ſuffer us, or themſelves rather, to reap any fruit from them, if all our wooings and intreatings of Men to have mercy on their own Souls will not work on them, yet be ſure to continue ſtill to exhort by thy example. Let thy great care and tenderneſs of thy own Soul preach to them

the value of theirs, and give not over thy compassions to them, but with the Prophet, *Jer.* 13. 17. *Let thy Soul weep in secret for them*; and with the *Psalmist*, *Let rivers of waters run down thine eyes, because they keep not Gods Law*, Psal. 119. 136. Yea, with Christ himself, weep over them, *who will not know the things that belong to their peace*, *Luke* 19. 42. And when no importunities with them will work, yet even then cease not to importune God for them, that he will draw them to himself. Thus we see *Samuel*, when he could not dissuade the People from that sinful purpose they were upon, yet he professes notwithstanding, that he will not cease praying for them; nay, he look't on it as so much a duty, that it would be sin for him to omit it, *God forbid*, says he, *that I should sin against the Lord in ceasing to pray for you*, 1 *Sam.* 12. 23 Nor shall we need to fear that our prayers will be quite lost, for if they prevail not for those for whom we pour them out, yet however they will return into our own bosoms, *Psalm* 35. 13. we shall be sure not to miss of the reward of that Charity.

Charity in respect to the Body.

In the second place, we are to exercise this Active Charity towards the bodies of our Neighbours; we are not only to compassionate their pains and miseries, but also to do what we can for their ease and relief. The good *Samaritan*, *Luke* 10. had never been proposed as our pattern, had he not as well helped as pitied the wounded Man. 'Tis not good wishes, no nor good words neither, that avail in such cases, as S. *James* tells us, if

a brother or ſiſter be naked and deſtitute of daily food, and one of you ſay unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled, notwithſtanding ye give him not thoſe things that are needful for the body, what doth it profit? *James* 2. 15, 16. No ſure, it profits them nothing in reſpect of their bodies, and it will profit thee as little in reſpect of thy Soul, it will never be reckoned to thee as a Charity. This relieving of the bodily wants of our brethren, is a thing ſo ſtrictly required of us, that we find it ſet down, *Matth.* 25. as the eſpecial thing we ſhall be tried by at the laſt Day, on the omiſſion whereof is grounded that dreadful ſentence, Verſe 41. *Depart from me ye curſed, into everlaſting fire, prepared for the Devil and his Angels.* And if it ſhall now be asked, what are the particular acts of this kind which we are to perform? I think we cannot better inform our ſelves for the frequent and ordinary ones, than from this Chapter, where are ſet down theſe ſeverals. *The giving meat to the hungry, and drink to the thirſty, harbouring the ſtranger, clothing the naked, and viſiting the ſick and impriſoned*; By which viſiting is meant not a bare coming to ſee them, but ſo coming as to comfort and relieve them: for otherwiſe it will be but like the *Levite* in the Goſpel, *Luke* 10. who came and *looked on the wounded man*, but did no more, which will never be accepted by God. Theſe are common and ordinary exerciſes of this charity, for which we cannot want frequent opportunities. But beſides theſe there may ſometimes by Gods eſpecial providence fall into our hands, occaſions of doing other good offices to the bodies of

our Neighbours; we may ſometimes find a wounded Man with the *Samaritan*, and then 'tis our duty to do as he did; we may ſometimes find an innocent perſon condemned to death, as *Suſanna* was, and then are with *Daniel* to uſe all poſſible endeavour for their deliverances. This caſe *Solomon* ſeems to refer to, *Prov.* 24. 11. *If thou forbear to deliver him that is drawn unto death, and them that are ready to be ſlain; if thou ſayeſt, Behold we knew it not; doth not he that pondereth the heart conſider? and he that keepeth thy ſoul, doth not he know it? Shall not he render to every man according to his deeds?* We are not lightly to put off the matter with vain excuſes, but to remember that God, who knows our moſt ſecret thoughts, will ſeverely examine, whether we have willingly omitted the performance of ſuch a charity: ſometimes again (nay, God knows, often now adays) we may ſee a Man that by a courſe of intemperance is in danger to deſtroy his health, to ſhorten his days, and then it is a due charity not only to the ſoul, but to the body alſo, to endeavour to draw him from it. It is impoſſible to ſet down all the poſſible acts of this corporal charity, becauſe there may ſometimes happen ſuch opportunities as none can foreſee; we are therefore always to carry about us a ſerious reſolution of doing whatever good of this kind we ſhall at any time diſcern occaſion for, and then whenever that occaſion is offered, we are to look on it as a call, as it were from Heaven, to put that reſolution in practice. This part of charity ſeems to be ſo much implanted in our natures, as we are Men, that we generally account them

not

not only unchriſtian, but inhumane that are void of it; and therefore I hope there will not need much perſwaſion to it, ſince our very nature inclines us; but certainly that very conſideration will ſerve hugely to encreaſe the guilt of thoſe that are wanting in it; For ſince this command is ſo agreeable even to fleſh and bloud, our diſobedience to it can proceed from nothing but a ſtubbornes and reſiſtance againſt God who gives it.

SUNDAY XVII.

Of Charity; Alms-giving, &c. *Of Charity in reſpect of our Neighbors Credit*, &c. *Of Peace-making: Of going to Law: Of Charity to our Enemies*, &c.

Sect. 1. THE third way of expreſſing this Charity is towards the Goods or Eſtate of our Neighbour; we are to endeavour his thriving and proſperity in theſe outward good things; and to that end, be willing to aſſiſt and further him in all honeſt ways of improving or preſerving them, by any neighbourly and friendly office: Opportunities of this do many times fall out. A man may ſometimes by his power or perſwaſion

Charity in reſpect of the Goods.

deliver his neighbours goods out of the hands of a thief or oppreſſor; ſometimes again by his advice and counſel, he may ſet him in a way of thriving, or turn him from ſome ruinous courſe; and many other occaſions there may be of doing good-turns to another, without any loſs or damage to our ſelves: and then we

Towards the Rich.

are to do them, even to our Rich neighbours, thoſe that are as wealthy (perhaps much more ſo) as our ſelves; for though Charity do not bind us to give to thoſe that want leſs than our ſelves, yet whenever we can further their profit without leſſening our own ſtore, it requires it of us: Nay, if the damage be but light to us in compariſon of the advantage to him, it will become us rather to hazard that light damage, than loſe him that greater advantage.

Towards the Poor.

2. But towards our poor brother, Charity ties us to much more; we are there only to conſider the ſupplying of his wants, and not to ſtick at parting with what is our own, to relieve him, but as far as we are able give freely what is neceſſary to him. This duty of Alms-giving is perfectly neceſſary for the approving our love not only to Men, but even to God himſelf, as S. *John* tells us, 1 *John* 3. 17. *Whoſo hath this worlds goods, and ſeeth his brother have need, and ſhutteth up his bowels of compaſſion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?* 'Tis vain for him to pretend to love either God or man, who loves his money ſo much better, that he will ſee his poor brother (who is a Man, and bears the image

image of God) ſuffer all extremities, rather than part with any thing to relieve him. On the other ſide, the performance of this duty is highly acceptable with God as well as with Men.

3. 'Tis called, *Heb.* 13. 16. *A ſacrifice wherewith God is well pleaſed*, and again, *Phil.* 4. 18. S. *Paul* calls their Alms to him, *A Sacrifice acceptable, well-pleaſing to God*, and the Church hath always look'd on it as ſuch; and therefore joyned it with the ſolemneſt part of worſhip, the holy Sacrament. But becauſe even Sacrifices themſelves under the Law, were often made unacceptable by being maimed and blemiſhed, it will here be neceſſary to enquire what are the due qualifications of this Sacrifice.

Motives of Alms-giving.

4. Of theſe there are ſome that reſpect the motive, ſome the manner of our giving. The motive may be threefold, reſpecting God, our neighbour, and our ſelves. That which reſpects God is obedience and thankfulneſs to him: he has commanded we ſhould give alms, and therefore one ſpecial end of our doing ſo, muſt be the obeying that precept of his. And it is from his bounty alone that we receive all our plenty, and this is the propereſt way of expreſſing our thankfulneſs for it, for, as the *Pſalmiſt* ſaith, *our goodneſs extendeth not unto God*, Pſa. 16. 2. That tribute which we deſire to pay out of our eſtates, we cannot pay to his perſon. 'Tis the poor, that are as it were his Proxy and receivers, and therefore whatever we ſhould by way of thankfulneſs give back again unto God, our alms is the way of doing it. Secondly, in

reſpect

respect of our neighbour, the motive must be a true love and compassion to him, a tender fellow-feeling of his wants, and desire of his comfort and relief. Thirdly, in respect of our selves, the motive is to be the hope of that eternal reward promised to this performance. This Christ points out to us, when he bids us *Lay up our treasure in Heaven*, Matth. 6. 20. And to *make us friends of the Mammon of unrighteousness, that they may receive us into everlasting habitations*, Luke 16. 9. that is, by a charitable dispensing of our temporal goods to the poor, to lay up a stock in Heaven, to gain a title to those endless felicities, which God hath promised to the charitable. That is the harvest we must expect of what we sow in these works of mercy, which will be so rich as would abundantly recompence us, though we should, as the Apostle speaks, 1 *Cor.* 13. 3. *Bestow all our goods to feed the poor:* But then we must be sure we make this our sole aim, and not instead of this, propose to our selves the praise of Men, as the motive of our charity, that will rob us of the other; this is expressly told us by Christ, *Matth.* 6. They that set their hearts on the credit they shall gain with Men, must take that as their portion, Verse 3. *Verily I say unto you they have their reward*; they chuse, it seems, rather to have Men their Pay-masters, than God, and to them they are turn'd off; that little airy praise they get from them, is all the reward they must expect: *Ye have no reward of my Father which is in Heaven*, Verse 1. We have therefore need to watch our hearts narrowly, that this desire of vain glory steal not in, and befool us into that

that miserable exchange of a vain blast of Mens breath for those substantial and eternal joys of Heaven.

5. In the second place we must take care of our Alms-giving, in respect of the manner; and in that, first, we must give chearfully; Men usually value a small thing that is given chearfully, and with a good heart, more than a much greater, that is wrung from a Man with grudging and unwillingness; and God is of the same mind, he loves a chearful giver, 2 *Cor.* 9. 7. which the Apostle makes the reason of the foregoing exhortation, of not *giving grudgingly, or as of necessity*, Verse 6. And sure 'tis no unreasonable thing, that is herein required of us, there being no duty that has to humane nature more of pleasure and delight, unless it be where covetousness or cruelty have quite worked out the Man, and put a ravenous beast in his stead. Is it not a most ravishing pleasure to him that hath any bowels, to see the joy that a seasonable alms brings to a poor wretch? How it revives and puts new spirits in him, that was even sinking? Certainly the most sensual creature alive knows not how to bestow his money on any thing, that shall bring him in so great a delight, and therefore methinks it should be no hard matter to give not only without grudging, but even with a great deal of alacrity and chearfulness, it being the fetching in of pleasure to our selves.

Manner of Alms-giving.

Chearfully.

6. There

The fear of impoverishing our selves by it vain and impious.

6. There is but one Objection can be made against this, and that is, that the danger of impoverishing ones self by what one gives may take off that pleasure, and make Men either not give at all, or not so chearfully. To this I answer: That first, were this hazard never so apparent, yet it being the Command of God that we should thus give, we are yet to obey chearfully, and be as well content to part with our goods in pursuance of this duty, as we are many times called to do upon some other. In which case Christ tells us, *He that forsakes not all that he hath, cannot be his Disciple.*

7. But secondly, this is sure a vain supposition. God having particularly promised the contrary to the Charitable; that it shall bring blessings on them, even in these outward things. *The liberal soul shall be made fat, and he that watereth shall be watered also himself*, Prov. 11. 25. *He that giveth to the poor shall not lack*, Prov. 28. 27. And many the like texts there are, so that one may truly say, this objection is grounded in direct unbelief. The short of it is, we dare not trust God for this Giving to the poor is directly the putting our wealth into his hands, *He that giveth to the poor lendeth unto the Lord*, Prov. 19. 17. and that too on solemn promise of repayment, as it follows in that Verse, *That which he hath given will he pay him again.* It is amongst Men thought a great disparagement, when we refuse to trust them; it shews we either think them not sufficient, or not honest. How vile

an

an affront is it then to God thus to diſtruſt him? May, indeed, how horrid blaſphemy, to doubt the ſecurity of that, for which he has thus expreſly paſt his word, who is Lord of all, and therefore cannot be inſufficient, and who is the God of truth, and therefore will not fail to make good his promiſe? Let not then that infidel fear of future want, contract and ſhut up thy bowels from thy poor brother; for though he be never likely to pay thee, yet God becomes his Surety, and enters bond with him, and will moſt aſſuredly pay thee with encreaſe. Therefore it is ſo far from being damage to thee, thus to give, that it is thy great advantage. Any man would rather chuſe to put his Money in ſome ſure hand, where he may both improve, and be certain of it at his need, than to let it lye unprofitable by him, eſpecially if he be in danger of thieves, or other accidents, by which he may probably loſe it. Now alas! all that we poſſeſs is in minutely danger of loſing; innumerable accidents there are, which may in an inſtant bring a rich man to beggery, he that doubts this, let him but read the ſtory of *Job*, and he will there find an example of it: And therefore what ſo prudent courſe can we take for our wealth, as to put it out of the reach of thoſe accidents, by thus lending it to God, where we may be ſure to find it ready at our greateſt need, and that too with improvement and increaſe? In which reſpect it is that the Apoſtle compares Alms to ſeed, 2 *Cor.* 9. 10. We know it is the nature of Seed that is ſown, to multiply and increaſe, and ſo do all our acts of mercy, they return not ſingle

and

and naked to us, but bring in their ſheaves with them, a moſt plenteous and bountiful harveſt. God deals not with our Alms, as we too often do with his graces, wrap them up in a napkin, ſo that they ſhall never bring in any advantage to us, but makes us moſt rich returns: and therefore we have all reaſon moſt chearfully, yea, joyfully to ſet to this Duty, which we have ſuch invitations to, as well in reſpect of our own intereſts, as our neighbours needs.

Give ſeaſonably.

8. Secondly, We muſt give ſeaſonably: it is true indeed there are ſome ſo poor, that an Alms can never come unſeaſonably, becauſe they always want, yet even to them there may be ſome ſpecial ſeaſons of doing it to their greater advantage; for ſometimes an Alms may not only deliver a poor Man from ſome preſent extremity, but by the right timing of it, may ſet him in ſome way of a more comfortable ſubſiſtence afterward. And for the moſt, I preſume it is a good Rule, to diſpenſe what we intend to any, as ſoon as may be, for delays are hurtful oftentimes both to them and our ſelves; firſt, as to them, it is ſure the longer we delay, the longer they groan under the preſent want, and after we have deſigned them a relief, it is in ſome degree a cruelty to defer beſtowing of it, for ſo long we prolong their ſufferings. You will think him a hard-hearted Phyſician, that having a certain cure for a Man in pain, ſhould, when he might preſently apply it, make unneceſſary delays, and ſo keep the poor Man ſtill in torture: and the ſame it is here: we want of the due compaſſion,

ſon, if we can be content our poor brother ſhould have one hour of unneceſſary ſuffering, when we have preſent opportunity of relieving him; or if he be not in ſuch an extremity of want, yet whatever we intend him for his greater comfort he loſes ſo much of it, as the time of the delay amounts to. Secondly, in reſpect of our ſelves, 'tis ill to defer; for thereby we give advantage to the temptations either of Satan or our own covetous humour, to diſſwade us from it. Thus it fares too often with many Chriſtian duties; for want of a ſpeedy execution, our purpoſes cool, and never come to act; ſo many reſolve they will repent, but becauſe they ſet not immediately upon it, one delay ſucceeds another, and keeps them from ever doing it at all; and ſo are very apt to fall out in this caſe, eſpecially with men who are of a covetous temper, and therefore they of all others ſhould not truſt themſelves thus to delay.

9. Thirdly, We ſhould take care to give prudently, that is, to give moſt, where it is moſt needed, and in ſuch a manner, as may do the receiver moſt good. Charities do often miſcarry for want of this care, for if we give at all adventures to all that ſeem to want, we may ſometimes give more to thoſe, whoſe ſloth and lewdneſs is the cauſe of their want, than to thoſe who beſt deſerve it, and ſo both encourage the one in their idleneſs, and diſable our ſelves from giving to the other. Yet I doubt not ſuch may be the preſent wants even of the moſt unworthy, that we are to relieve them: but where no ſuch preſſing *Prudently.*

ſing need is, we ſhall do beſt to chuſe out the fitter objects of charity, ſuch as are thoſe who either are not able to labour, or elſe have a greater charge than their labour can maintain, and to thoſe our alms ſhould be given alſo in ſuch manner as may be moſt likely to do them good: the manner of which may differ according to the circumſtances of their condition; it may to ſome be beſt perhaps, to give them by little and little, to others the giving it all at once may tend more to their benefit; and ſometimes a ſeaſonable loan may do as well as a gift, and that may be in the power ſometimes of thoſe who are able to give but little: but when we thus lend on charity, we muſt lend freely without Uſe, and alſo with a purpoſe that if he ſhould prove unable to pay, we will forgive ſo much of the Principal as his needs require, and our abilities will permit. They want much of this charity, who clap up poor debtors in Priſon, when they know they have nothing to anſwer the debt, which is a great cruelty, to make another miſerable, when nothing is gained to our ſelves by it.

10. Fourthly, We ſhould give liberally, we muſt not be ſtrait-handed in our alms, and give by ſuch pitiful ſcantlings, as will bring almoſt no relief to the receiver, for that is a kind of mockery; 'tis as if one ſhould pretend to feed one that is almoſt famiſhed by giving him a crumb of bread; ſuch Doles as that would be moſt ridiculous, yet I fear 'tis too near the proportion of ſome Mens alms; ſuch Men are below thoſe Diſciples we read of, who knew only the Baptiſm of *John*, for 'tis to be obſerved, that

John

John Baptiſt, who was but the forerunner of Chriſt, makes it a ſpecial part of his doctrine, that he *that hath two coats ſhould impart to him that hath none*, *Luke* 3. 11. He ſays not, He that hath ſome great Wardrobe, but even he that hath but two coats muſt part with one of them; from whence we may gather, that whatſoever is above (not our vanity but) our need, ſhould thus be diſpoſed of, when our brethrens neceſſity requires it. But if we look into the firſt time of the Goſpel, we ſhall find Chriſtianity far exceeded this proportion of *John*'s; the converts aſſigned not a part only, but frankly *gave all to the uſe of the brethren*, *Acts* 4. And though that being upon an extraordinary occaſion, will be no meaſure of our conſtant practice, yet it may ſhew us how prime and fundamental a part of Chriſtianity, this of Charity is, that at the very firſt founding of the Church, ſuch vaſt degrees of it were practiſed; and if we farther conſider what precepts of love are given us in the Goſpel, even to the *laying down our lives for the brethren*, 1 *John* 3. 16. we cannot imagine our goods are in God's account ſo much more precious than our lives, that he would command us to be prodigal of the one, and yet allow us to be ſparing of the other.

11. A multitude of Arguments might be brought to recommend this bounty to all that profeſs Chriſt; I ſhall mention only two, which I find uſed by S. *Paul* to the *Corinthians* on this occaſion. The firſt is the example of Chriſt, 2 *Cor.* 8. 9. *For ye know the grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, who though he was rich, yet for your ſakes he became*

became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich. Chriſt emptied himſelf of all that glory and greatneſs he enjoyed in Heaven with his Father, and ſubmitted himſelf to a life of much meanneſs and poverty, only to enrich us. And therefore for ſhame, let us not grudge to empty our Coffers, to leſſen ſomewhat of our heaps to relieve his poor members. The ſecond, is the expectation of reward, which will be more or leſs, according to the degrees of our Alms, 2 *Cor.* 9. 6. *He that ſoweth ſparingly ſhall reap ſparingly, and he that ſoweth bountifully ſhall reap bountifully.* We think him a very improvident Husbandman that to ſave a little ſeed at preſent, ſows ſo thin, as to ſpoil his crop; and the ſame folly 'twill be in us, if by the ſparingneſs of our Alms, we make our ſelves a lank harveſt hereafter, loſe either all, or a great part of thoſe rewards which God hath provided for the liberal Alms-giver. What is the proportion which may be called a liberal giving, I ſhall not undertake to ſet down, there being degrees even in liberality; one may give liberally, and yet another give more liberally than he; beſides, liberality is to be meaſured, not ſo much by what is given, as by the ability of the giver. A man of a mean eſtate may give leſs than one of a great, and yet be the more liberal perſon, becauſe that little may be more out of his, than the greater is out of the others. Thus we ſee Chriſt pronounces the poor Widow to *have given much more to the Treaſury, than all the rich men, Luke* 21. 3. not that her two mites were more than their rich gifts, but that it was more for her, ſhe having left nothing behind, where-

as

they gave out of their abundance what they might eaſily ſpare. Every man muſt herein judge for himſelf; we ſee the Apoſtle, though he earneſtly preſs the *Corinthians* to bounty, yet preſcribes not to them how much they ſhall give, but leaves that to their own breaſts, 2 *Cor.* 9. 7. *Every man according as he purpoſeth in his heart, ſo let him give.* But let us ſtill remember that the more we give (provided we do not thereby fail in the ſupport of thoſe, that moſt immediately depend on us) the more acceptable it will be to God, and the more rewardable by him. And to ſecure the performance of the duty of alms-giving (whatever the proportion be) we may do very well to follow the advice S. *Paul* gives the *Corinthians* in this matter, 1 *Cor.* 16. 2. *Upon the firſt day of the week let every one of you lay by him in ſtore as God hath proſpered him.* If men would do thus, lay by ſomewhat weekly in ſtore for this work of Charity, it were the ſureſt way not to be unprovided of ſomewhat to give, when an occaſion offered it ſelf, and by giving ſo by little and little the expence would become leſs ſenſible, and ſo be a means to prevent thoſe grudgings and repinings, which are apt to attend Men in greater diſburſements; and ſure this were in other reſpects alſo a very proper courſe, for when a Tradeſman caſts up his weekly account, and ſees what his gains have been, 'tis of all others the moſt ſeaſonable time to offer this tribute to God out of what he hath by his bleſſing gained. If any will ſay they cannot ſo well weekly reckon their gains, as by longer ſpaces of time, I ſhall not contend with them for that

preciſe

Preciſe time, let it be done monthly or quarterly, ſo it be done. But that ſomewhat ſhould ſtill be laid by in bank for theſe uſes, rather than left looſe to our ſudden Charities is ſure very expedient; and I doubt not, whoever will make trial of it, will upon experience acknowledge it to be ſo.

Charity in reſpect of the Credit.

12. The fourth exerciſe of our Charity is towards the credit of our neighbour: and of this we may have many occaſions; ſometimes towards the innocent, and ſometimes alſo towards the guilty. If one whom we know to be an innocent perſon, be ſlandered, and traduced, Charity binds us to do what we may for the declaring his innocency, and delivering him from that falſe imputation, and that not only by witneſſing when we are called to it, but by a voluntary offering our teſtimony on his behalf, or if the accuſation be not before a Court of Juſtice, and ſo there be no place for that our more ſolemn teſtimony, but that it be only a ſlander toſt from one to another, yet even there we are to do what we can to clear him, by taking all occaſions publickly to declare what we know of his innocency. But even to the guilty there is ſome Charity of this kind to be performed, ſometimes by concealing the fault, if it be ſuch that no other part of Charity to others make it neceſſary to diſcover, or it be not ſo notorious, as that it will be ſure to betray it ſelf. The wounds of Reputation are of all others the moſt incurable, and therefore it may well become Chriſtian Charity to prevent them, even where

where they have been deſerved; and perhaps ſuch a tenderneſs in hiding the fault may ſooner bring the offender to Repentance, if it be ſeconded (as it ought to be) with all earneſtneſs of private admonition: But if the fault be ſuch, that it be not to be concealed, yet ſtill there may be place for this Charity, in extenuating and leſſening it, as far as the circumſtances will bear: As if it were done ſuddenly and raſhly, Charity will allow ſome abatement of the Cenſure, which would belong to a deſigned and deliberate Act; and ſo proportionably in other circumſtances. But the moſt frequent exerciſes of this Charity happen towards thoſe, of whoſe either innocency or guilt we have no knowledge, but are by ſome doubtful actions brought under ſuſpicion: And here we muſt remember, that it is the property of love not to think evil, to judge the beſt; and therefore we are both to abſtain from uncharitable concluſions of them our ſelves, and as much as lies in us, to keep others from them alſo, and ſo endeavour to preſerve the credit of our neighbour; which is oftentimes as much ſhaken by unjuſt ſuſpicions, as it would be by the trueſt accuſation. To theſe Caſes, I ſuppoſe, belongs that precept of Chriſt, *Mat.* 7. 1. *Judge not*; and when we conſider how that is backt in the following words, *That ye be not judged*, we ſhall have cauſe to believe it no ſuch light matter as the World ſeems to account it; our unmerciful judging of others will be paid home to us, in the ſtrict and ſevere Judgment of God.

The acts of Charity in some respects acts of Justice also.

13. I have now gone through this Active Charity, as it relates to the several capacities of our brethren, many of the particulars whereof were before briefly mentioned, when we spake of Justice. If any think it improper, that the same acts should be made parts of Justice and Charity too, I shall desire them to consider, that Charity being by Christs command become a debt to our brethren, all the parts of it may in that respect be ranked under the head of Justice, since to pay, paying of debts is a part of that: Yet because in our common use we do distinguish between the Offices of Justice and Charity, I have chose to enlarge on them in particular reference to Charity. But I desire it may still be remembred, that whatsoever is under precept, is so much a due from us, that we sin not only against Charity, but Justice too, if we neglect it; which deserves to be considered the more to stir up our care to the performance, and the rather, because there seems to be a common error in this point. Men look upon their Acts of mercy, as things purely voluntary, that they have no Obligation to; and the effect of it is this, that they are apt to think very highly of themselves, when they have performed any, though never so mean, but never blame themselves, though they omit all: which is a very dangerous, but withall a very natural fruit of the former perswasion. If there be any Charities wherein Justice is not concerned, they are those which for the height

and

degrees of them are not made matter of ſtrict ty, that is, are not in thoſe degrees command- by God: and even after theſe, 'twill be very ſonable for us to labour; but that cannot be without taking the lower and neceſſary de- in our way; and therefore let our firſt care for them.

14. To help us wherein there ll be no better means, than keep before our eyes that nd rule *of Loving our neigh- as our ſelves*: this the Apoſtle makes the m of our Whole duty to our Neighbours, . 13. 9. Let this therefore be the ſtandard, reby to meaſure all thy actions, which re- to others; whenever any neceſſity of thy ghbours preſents it ſelf to thee, ask thy ſelf, ether, if thou wert in the like caſe, thy love to ſelf would not make thee induſtrious for ief, and then reſolve thy love to thy Neighbour ſt have the ſame effect for him. This is that yal Law, as S. *James* calls it, *Jam.* 2. 8. hich all that profeſs themſelves ſubjects to Chriſt, muſt be ruled by; and whoſoever is ſo, ll not fail of performing all charities to hers, becauſe 'tis ſure he would upon the like caſions have all ſuch performed to himſelf. ere is none but wiſhes to have his good name ended, his poverty relieved, his bodily ſuf- ing ſuccoured; only it may be ſaid, that in ſpiritual wants, there are ſome ſo careleſs of ſelves, that they wiſh no ſupply, they de- no reproofs, no inſtructions, nay, are angry n they are given them; it may therefore

The great rule of Charity.

ſeem that ſuch Men are not by vertue of this rule tied to thoſe ſorts of Charities. To this I anſwer, That the love of our ſelves, which is here ſet as the meaſure of that to our Neighbour, is to be underſtood to be that reaſonable love, which Men ought to have, and therefore though a Man fail of that due love he ows himſelf, yet his Neighbour hath not thereby forfeited his right, he has ſtill a claim to ſuch a degree of our love, as is anſwerable to that, which in right we ſhould bear to our ſelves, and ſuch I am ſure is this care of our ſpiritual eſtate, and therefore 'tis not our deſpiſing our own Souls, that will abſolve us from Charity to other Mens: yet I ſhall not much preſs this duty in ſuch Men, it being neither likely that they will be perſwaded to it, or do any good by it, their ill example will overwhelm all their good exhortations, and make them unfruitful.

Peace-making.

15. There is yet one Act of Charity behind, which does not properly fall under any one of the former heads, and yet may relate to them all, and that is, the making peace and amity among others: by doing whereof we may much benefit both the Souls, Bodies, Goods and Credit of our brethren; for all theſe are in danger by ſtrife and contention. The reconciling of enemies is a moſt bleſſed work, and brings a bleſſing on the Actors: We have Chriſt's word for it, *Bleſſed are the peace-makers, Matth.* 5. 9. and therefore we may be encouraged diligently to lay hold of all opportunities of doing this office of Charity, to uſe all our Art and endeavour

to

take up all grudges and quarrels we diſcern among others; neither muſt we only labour to reſtore peace where it is loſt, but to preſerve it where it is: Firſt, generally, by ſtriving to beget in the hearts of all we converſe with, a true value of that moſt precious Jewel, Peace; Secondly, particularly, by a timely prevention of thoſe jars and unkindneſſes, we ſee likely to fall out. It may many times be in the power of a diſcreet friend or neighbour, to cure thoſe miſtakes and miſapprehenſions, which are the firſt beginnings of quarrels and contentions; and it will be both more eaſie and more profitable, thus to prevent, than pacifie ſtrifes. 'Tis ſure the more eaſie, for when a quarrel is once broken out, 'tis like a violent flame, which cannot ſo ſoon be quencht, as it might have been, while it was but a ſmothering fire. And then 'tis alſo more profitable, for it prevents many ſins, which in the progreſs of an open contention, are almoſt ſure to be committed. *Solomon* ſays, *In the multitude of words there wanteth not ſin*, Prov. 10. 19. which cannot more truly be ſaid of any ſort of words, than thoſe that paſs in anger, and then, though the quarrel be afterwards compoſed, yet thoſe ſins will ſtill remain on their account; and therefore it is a great Charity to prevent them.

16. But to fit a Man for ſo excellent an Office as Peace-making, 'tis neceſſary that he be firſt reconcilably peaceable himſelf; for with what face canſt thou perſwade others

He that undertakes it, muſt be peaceable himſelf.

others to that which thou wilt not perform thy ſelf? Or how canſt thou expect thy perſwaſions ſhould work? 'Twill be a ready reply in every Mans mouth, *Thou Hypocrite, caſt out firſt the beam out of thine own eye, Matth. 7. 5.* and therefore be ſure thou qualifie thy ſelf for the work. There is one point of Peaceableneſs which ſeems to be little regarded among Men, and that is in the Caſe of Legal treſpaſſes; Men think it nothing to go to Law about every petty trifle, and as long as they have but Law on their ſide, never think they are to blame: but ſure had we that true peaceableneſs of ſpirit which we ought, we ſhould be unwilling for ſuch ſlight matters to trouble and diſquiet our Neighbours. Not that all going to Law is utterly unchriſtian, but ſuch kind of Suits eſpecially, as are upon contentiouſneſs, and ſtoutneſs of humour, to defend ſuch an inconſiderable right as the parting with will do us little or no harm, or which is yet worſe, to avenge ſuch a treſpaſs. And even in great matters, he that ſhall part with ſomewhat of his Right for love of Peace, does ſurely the moſt Chriſtianly, and moſt agreeably to the advice of the Apoſtle, *1 Cor. 6. 7. Rather to take wrong, and ſuffer our ſelves to be defrauded.* But if the damage be ſo unſupportable, that it is neceſſary for us to go to Law, yet even then we muſt take care of preſerving Peace; firſt, by carrying ſtill a friendly and Chriſtian temper towards the party, not ſuffering our hearts to be at all eſtranged from him; ſecondly by being willing to yield to any reaſonable terms

Of going to Law.

of

agreement, whenever they ſhall be offered; truly if we carry not this temper of mind in ſuits, I ſee not how they can be reconcile- with that peaceableneſs ſo ſtrictly required all Chriſtians. Let thoſe conſider this who it their pleaſure themſelves to diſquiet their ghbour, or their trade to ſtir up others to do This tender regard of Peace both in our es, and others, is abſolutely neceſſary to be ained of all thoſe, who own themſelves to the ſervants of him, whoſe title it is to be the *ce of Peace, Iſa. 9. 6.*

This Charity of the actions muſt reach to Enemies.

All that remains to ought on concerning Charity of the Actions, extent of it, which be as large as the for- of the affections, even to the taking in, not ſtrangers, and thoſe of no relation to us, even of our bittereſt enemies. I have al- ſpoken ſo much of the Obligation we are to forgive them, that I ſhall not here ny thing of that, but that being ſuppoſed y, 'twill ſure then appear no unreaſonable to proceed one ſtep further, by doing them turns; for when we have once forgiven we can then no longer account them ene- and ſo 'twill be no hard matter even to and bloud to do all kind things to them. indeed this is the way, by which we muſt the ſincerity of our forgiveneſs. 'Tis eaſie to I forgive ſuch a Man, but if when an op- unity of doing him good is offered, thou neſt it, 'tis apparent there yet lurks the old

malice in thy heart, where there is a through forgiveneſs, there will be as great a readineſs to benefit an enemy as a friend; nay, perhaps in ſome reſpects a greater, a true charitable perſon looking upon it as an eſpecial prize, when he has an opportunity of evidencing the truth of his reconciliation, and obeying the precept of his Saviour, by *doing good to them that hate him*, *Matt.* 5. 44. Let us therefore reſolve that all actions of kindneſs are to be performed to our enemies, for which we have not only the command, but alſo the example of Chriſt, who had not only ſome inward relentings towards us his obſtinate and moſt provoking enemies, but ſhewed it in acts, and thoſe no cheap, or eaſie ones, but ſuch as coſt him his deareſt bloud. And ſurely we can never pretend to be either obeyers of his Command, or followers of his Example, if we grudge to teſtifie our loves to our Enemies by thoſe ſo much cheaper ways *of feeding them in hunger*, and the like, recommended to us by the Apoſtle, *Rom.* 12. 20. But if we could perform theſe acts of kindneſs to enemies in ſuch manner as might draw them from their enmity, and win them to Peace, the Charity would be doubled. And this we ſhould aim at, for that we ſee the Apoſtle ſets as the end of the forementioned act of feeding, &c. that we may *heap coals of fire on their heads*, not coals to burn, but to melt them into all love and tenderneſs towards us; and this were indeed the moſt complete way of imitating Chriſt's example, who in all he did and ſuffered for us, deſigned the reconciling of us to himſelf.

18.

18. I have now ſhewed you the ſeveral parts of our duty to our Neighbour, towards the performance whereof I know nothing more neceſſary, than the turning out of our hearts that ſelf-love which ſo often poſſeſſes them; and that ſo wholly, that it leaves no room for Charity, nay, nor Juſtice neither to our Neighbour. By this ſelf-love I mean not that true love of our ſelves, which is the love and care of our Souls (for that would certainly help, not hinder us in this duty) but I mean that immoderate love of our own worldly intereſts and advantages, which is apparently the root of all both injuſtice and uncharitableneſs towards others. We find this ſin of ſelf-love ſet by the Apoſtle in the head of a whole troop of ſins, 2 *Tim.* 3. 2. as if it were ſome principal officer in Satans camp; and certainly, not without reaſon, for it never goes without an accurſed train of many other ſins, which like the Dragons tail, Rev. 12. 4. ſweeps away all care of duty to others. We are by it made ſo vehement and intent upon the pleaſing our ſelves, that we have no regard to any body elſe, contrary to the direction of St. *Paul*, *Rom.* 15. 2. which is, not to pleaſe our ſelves, *But every man to pleaſe his Neighbour for his good to edification*; which he backs with the example of Chriſt, Verſe 3. *For even Chriſt pleaſed not himſelf:* If therefore we have any ſincere deſire to have this vertue of charity rooted in our hearts, we muſt be careful to weed out this ſin of ſelf-love, for 'tis impoſſible they can proſper together.

Self-love an hindrance to this Charity.

Prayer a means to procure it.

19. But when we have removed this hindrance, we must remember that this, as all other graces, proceeds not from our selves, it is the gift of God, and therefore we must earnestly pray to him to work it in us, to send his holy Spirit, which once appeared in the form of a Dove, a meek and gall-less creature, to frame our hearts to the same temper, and enable us rightly to perform this duty.

Christian Duties both possible and pleasant.

20. I Have now past through those several Branches I at first proposed, and shewed you what is our Duty to God, our Selves, and our Neighbour: Of which I may say as it is, *Luke* 10. 28. *This do and thou shalt live.* And surely it is no impossible task to perform this in such a measure, as God will graciously accept, that is, in Sincerity, though not in Perfection, for God is not that austere Master, *Luke* 19. 20. *That reaps where he has not sown,* he requires nothing of us, which he is not ready by his Grace to enable us to perform, if we be not wanting to our selves, either in asking it by Prayer, or in using it by Diligence. And as it is not impossible, so neither is it such a sad melancholy task, as Men are apt to think it. 'Tis a special policy of Satans, to do as the spies did, *Numb.* 23. 28. *Bring up an ill report upon this good Land,* this state of Christian life, thereby to discourage us from entring into it, to fright us with I know not what Gyants we shall meet with; but let us not thus be cheated,

treated, let us but take the courage to try, and we shall indeed find it a *Canaan, a Land flowing with milk and honey*: God is not in this respect to his People *a wilderness, a Land of darkness, Jer.* 2. 31. His Service does not bereave Men of any true joy, but helps them to a great deal: Christs yoke is an easie, nay, a pleasant yoke, his burden a light, yea a gracious burden. There is in the Practice of Christian Duties a great deal of present pleasure, and if we feel it not, it is because of the resistance our vicious and sinful customs make, which by the contention raises an uneasiness. But then first, that is to be charged only on our selves, for having got those ill customs, and thereby made that hard to us, which in it self is most pleasant, the Duties are not to be accused for it. And then secondly, even there the pleasure of subduing those ill habits, overcoming those corrupt customs is such, as hugely outweigheth all the trouble of the combate.

Even when they expose us to outward sufferings.

21. But it will perhaps be said that some parts of piety are of such a nature, as will be very apt to expose us to persecutions and sufferings in the World, and that those are not joyous but grievous.

I answer, that even in those there is matter of joy. We see the Apostles thought it so, *They rejoyced that they were counted worthy to suffer for Christ's name*, Acts 4. 41. And S. *Peter* tells us, *That if any suffer as a Christian, he is to glorifie God in it*, 1 *Pet.* 4. 16. There is such a force and

vertue in the teſtimony of a good Conſcience, as is able to change the greateſt ſuffering into the greateſt triumph, and that teſtimony we can never have more clear and lively, than when we ſuffer for righteouſneſs ſake; ſo that you ſee Chriſtianity is very amiable even in its ſaddeſt dreſs, the inward comforts of it do far ſurpaſs all the outward tribulations that attend it, and that even in the inſtant, while we are in the ſtate of warfare upon Earth. But then if we look forward to the crown of our victories, thoſe eternal rewards in Heaven, we can never think thoſe tasks ſad, though we had nothing at preſent to ſweeten them, that have ſuch recompenſes await them at the end, were our labours never ſo heavy, we could have no cauſe to faint under them. Let us therefore whenever we meet with any diſcouragements in our courſe, fix our eye on this rich prize, and then *run with patience the race which is ſet before us, Heb.* 12. 2. Follow the Captain of our Salvation through the greateſt ſufferings, yea, even through the ſame red ſea of bloud which he hath waded, whenever our Obedience to him ſhall require it; for though our fidelity to him ſhould bring us to death it ſelf, we are ſure to be no loſers by it, for to ſuch he hath promiſed a Crown of life, the very expectation whereof is able to keep a Chriſtian more chearful in his fetters and dungeon, than a worldling can be in the midſt of his greateſt proſperities.

22. All that remains for me farther to add, is earneſtly to intreat and beſeech the Reader, that without delay, he put himſelf into this ſo pleaſant and gainful a courſe, by ſetting ſincerely to the practice of all thoſe things, which either by this Book, or by any other means he diſcerns to be his Duty, and the further he hath formerly gone out of his way, the more haſte it concerns him to make to get into it, and to uſe the more diligence in walking in it. He that hath a long journey to go, and finds he hath loſt a great part of his day in a wrong way, will not need much intreaty, either to turn into the right, or to quicken his pace in it. And this is the caſe of all thoſe that have lived in any courſe of ſin, they are in a wrong road, which will never bring them to the place they aim at; nay, which will certainly bring them to the place they moſt fear and abhor; much of their day is ſpent, how much will be left to finiſh their journey in, none knows, perhaps the next hour, the next minute, the night of death may overtake them; what a madneſs is it then for them to defer one moment to turn out of that Path which leads to certain deſtruction, and to put themſelves in that, which will bring them to bliſs and glory? Yet ſo are Men bewitched and enchanted with the Deceitfulneſs of ſin, that no intreaty, no perſwaſion can prevail with them, to make this ſo reaſonable, ſo neceſſary a change; not but that they acknowledge it needful to be done, but they are unwilling to do it yet, they would enjoy all the pleaſures

The danger of delaying our turning to God.

pleaſures of ſin as long as they live, and then they hope at their death, or ſome little time before it, to do all the buſineſs of their Souls. But, alas! Heaven is too high to be thus jumpt into, the way to it is a long and leiſurely aſcent, which requires times to walk. The hazards of ſuch deferring are more largely ſpoken of in the Diſcourſe of Repentance: I ſhall not here repeat them, but deſire the Reader ſeriouſly to lay them to heart, and then ſurely he will think it ſeaſonable Counſel that is given by the Wiſe man, *Eccluſ.* 5. 7. *Make no tarrying to turn to the Lord, and put not off from day to day.*

FINIS.